The whole works ... / Done from the Latin original by George Sewell, M.D. and J.T. Desaguliers, D.D. and F.R.S.

Contributors

Pitcairn, Archibald, 1652-1713. Sewell, George, -1726. Desaguliers, J. T. 1683-1744.

Publication/Creation

London : J. Pemberton, W. & J. Innys, 1727.

Persistent URL

https://wellcomecollection.org/works/yyc5uz2u

License and attribution

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection 183 Euston Road London NW1 2BE UK T +44 (0)20 7611 8722 E library@wellcomecollection.org https://wellcomecollection.org



XY. Pit 41431 / 18 T.p. differs from 41410/3 Budford



Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2019 with funding from Wellcome Library

https://archive.org/details/b30497449











THE Translator's PREFACE.



HE AUTHOR of these Differtations was one of the first, who leaving the Old Conjectural Method of Physical

Writers, ftruck into a New and more Solid Way of Reafoning, grounded upon Obfervations and Mathematical Principles.

HE fludied many Years abroad, where his great Learning, and fuccefsful Practice, procured him the Efteem of all Foreigners, and fpread his Reputation into as many different Countries, as the Variety of Students of Phyfic in Holland owed their Birth to, every one

carrying home a high Opinion of Dr PITCAIRN's useful Knowledge in that Science.

THESE Qualifications in his Art raifed him in a little Time to the Profef. forship at Leyden, unto which he was chose in the Year 1691, as much to the Reputation of the Scottish Nation as his own. Here he began his excellent Lectures, in a Manner, which confirmed his Auditors in the just Notions they had conceived of him, as of one who was to banish the Old false Maxims of Phyfic, and lay more certain and infallible Fundamentals of the most comprehensive Art the Mind of Man is capable of attaining. It were needlefs to inform the Reader what Errors he reformed, what new Lights he spread over the Face of Physic, and what admirable Hints he gave for its future Improvement, fuch as the Genius of a second PITCAIRN, or a present MEAD,

MEAD, might indeed carry to that defirable Pitch, which other Learned Men have hitherto laboured at in vain. There is no Page in these *Differtations* wherein something of this Nature may not be observed, and the Book it self will be the best Evidence of the Truth we affert.

HE continued in the Chair at Leyden fometime, and published a great many of the following Pieces in that Place, all which were admired by the Learned of the Faculty; and tho' fome of his Opinions met with Adversaries, the Doctor had no Occasion to give himfelf the Trouble of a Vindication, the Justness of his Reasoning raising him up Advocates wherever Truth prevailed over Sophistry, and good Sense was preferred to the Jargon of unintelligible Terms.

HE had in all Probability continued longer at this Place, but fome private A 3 Con=

Concerns obliged him to retire into his own Country, where his Fame had already made Way for an honourable Entertainment among all Perfons of the best Sense and Quality. Here he continued his Practice with equal Applause and Succefs, keeping at the fame Time a Correspondence with most of the great Men of the Faculty in all Parts of Europe, whom either his Writings or Conversation at Leyden had made his Friends and Admirers. Indeed he was the freeft and most communicative of his Advice of any Person, perhaps, that ever made so eminent a Figure in his Profession; never refusing either to fatisfy by Letter the Curiofity, or inform the Mind of the Enquirer. His Friendship with the great BELLINI, and Monf. HECQUET, must never be forgotten; and it is evident from their Writings, that they feemed to be proud of that Name, and took all Occasions to do Justice to the Merit of their Friend.

THIS

THIS may lead us into fome Part of his private Character, of which there are too many Witneffes living to make us fay any Thing but strict Truth.

IN the Business of his Profession he was always ready to ferve every one to the utmost of his Power, and even to contribute to their Health at the Danger of his own. He was a Man of too good Sense to be a Humourist in Physic, or refuse Attendance out of Pique, or Prejudice, or Affectation : He underftood the Value of Life too well to facrifice it to Caprice and Humour. There is one Thing more remarkable of him; That he was not at all concerned about Fees, and frighted from his Duty by the Sight of Poverty in his Patient, nay, he went with greater Chearfulnels to those from whom he could expect nothing but good Will, than to Per-A 4

Perfons of the higheft Condition. Be fides, in Cafes which feemed to require that Affiftance, he not only gave away his Skill and Medicines, but extended his Generofity for the Provision of other Conveniences for the Sick, and left the Marks of his Charity, as well as of the Liberality of his Art, behind him. The Virtue of Charity was really fo much his own, in the Ufe of it, that he contrived a most fecret and decent Manner of conveying his Benevolence, and relieved many who knew not their Benefactor.

IN fhort, he was one of the greateft and moft ufeful Men in his Profession this Age has produced, of a free and univerfal Genius, a good Orator, Poet, and Philosopher. He was of a pleasant, engaging Humour. Life fate very easy upon him in all its Circumstances. He despised many, but hated none. He loved his Friends. and laughed at his Ene-

Enemies. Thus he drew out Life to above fixty Years : And it was not long before he died, that he gave us that excellent Picture of himfelf in a Copy of Verfes, which are at leaft equal, both in their Eafinefs, Simplicity, and Elegance of Thought and Stile, to any of CATULLUS, and far fuperior to any modern Composition of that kind. They have been printed by Mr. PRIOR, * who honoured them with an Imitation ; how near the Original, the Reader may judge.

Ad AMICOS.

DUM studeo fungi fallentis munere vita,

Adfectoque viam sedibus Elysis,

Arctoà florens Sophia, Samiisque Superbus

Discipulis Animas morte carere cano.

Has

* Gualterus Dannistonus ad Amicos.

Has ego corporibus profugas ad Sidera mitto, Sideraque ingressis otia blanda dico; Qualia conveniunt Divis, Queis fata volebant

Vitai faciles molliter ire vias, Vinaque Ctelicolis media inter gaudia libo, Et me quid majus suspicor este viro. Sed fuerint nulli, for san, quos spondeo, cæli, Nullaque sint Ditis Numina, nulla Jovis; Fabula sit terris agitur que vita relictis, Quique superstes, Homo, qui nihil esto Deus, Attamen esse bilares, & inanes mittere curas Proderit, ac vitæ commoditate frui, Et Festos agitasse dies, ævique fugacis Tempora perpetuis detinuisse jocis.

His

His me parentem præceptis occupet Orcus ; Et mors seu Divum, seu nihil esse velit. Nam Sophia Ars illa est quæ fallere suaviter horas

Admonet, atque orci non timuisse minas.

To his FRIENDS. Studious the bufy Moments to deceive, That fleet between the Cradle and the Grave, I credit what the Græcian Dictates fay, And Samian Sounds o'er Scotia's Hills convey. When mortal Man refigns his transient Breath, The Body only I give o'er to Death: The Parts diffolv'd, and broken Frame I mourn, What came from Earth, I fee to Earth return.

The Immaterial Part, th' Etherial Soul,
Nor can Change vanquifh, nor can Death controul.
Glad I releafe it from its Partner's Cares,
And bid good Angels waft it to the Stars.
Then in the flowing Bowl I drown those Sighs,
Which, fpite of Wildom, from our Weakness rife;

The Draught to the Dead's Memory I commend,

And offer to the now Immortal Friend. But if oppos'd to what my Thoughts approve, Nor *Pluto*'s Rage there be, nor Pow'r of Jove, On its dark Side, if thou the Profpect take, Grant all forgot beyond black *Lethe*'s Lake:

In total Death fuppole the Mortal lie, No new Hereafter, nor a future Sky: Yet bear thy Lot content, yet cease to grieve; Why, e're Death comes, dost thou forbear to live?

The little Time thou haft 'twixt Instant now And Death's Approach, is all the Gods allow : And of this Little haft thou ought to fpare To fad Reflection, and corroding Care? The Moments past, if thou art wife, retrieve, With pleafant Mem'ry of the Blifs they gave. The prefent Hours in prefent Mirth employ, And bribe the future with the Hopes of Joy. The Future, few or more, howe'er they be,-Were destin'd erst, nor can by Fate's Decree Be now cut off, betwixt the Grave and Thee.

To

To conclude: As these Differtations were the only Performances in PHYSIC which Doctor PITCAIRN defigned for the Prefs, fo I have strictly confined my felf to them, forbearing to meddle with fome other Pieces handed about in Manuscript, because I am well affured the Author never intended to make them publick, most of them being no other than Extemporary Difcourses taken from his Mouth by Young Gentlemen, who studied Phyfic under his Direction, when Professor at Leyden.

IT was thought proper to leave out Doctor Bower's Epiftle fubjoined to the Latin Copy; not only becaufe I was refolved to give the English Reader nothing but what was Doctor PITCAIRN's Genuine Work, but chiefly becaufe it feemed the lefs needful, that his Disfertation upon the Motion which reduces the Ali-

Aliment in the Stomach to a Form proper for the Supply of the Blood, is fo very full upon the fame Subject.

THE Matter in fhort is this: Our Author in that Differtation attributes the Digeftion of the Aliment chiefly to the Action and Motions of the Stomach and other neighbouring Muscles. Doctor HECQUET, a Phylician at Paris, in a fmall Tract, lately espoused and maintained the fame Notion; and Doctor ASTRUC of Montpellier wrote a little Piece upon this Subject, principally against Doctor HECQUET, contending, That the Digestion was made not chiefly by Attrition, but by proper Juices diffolving the Meat by way of Ferment. And Doctor Bower's Epistle was intended for an Answer to Doctor ASTRUC, before it was known that Doctor HEC-QUET had made a proper Defence for himfelf. But the English Reader will be

be at no Lofs for any of these Pieces, if he carefully confiders Dr. PITCAIN's own Differtation, wherein he will find the Substance 'of almost all that has been faid upon either Side of the Question.

London, 1715.

G. SEWELL.





Dr. PITCAIRN's Preface.



EADER, You have here my R Dissertations; some of which were never before made public.

There is annexed to them an Epiftle in answer to ASTRUCIUS, a Frenchman, writtenby Dr. THOMAS BOWER, a Scot man, Professor of Mathematics, and Doctor of Physic in the famous Univerfity of Aberdeen, whose Knowledge in Mathematics is as remarkable, as his Friendship is valuable. I take the Opportunity of inferting in this Place Dr. JAMES GREGORY'S Opinion upon this Dispute, a celebrated Professor of Mathematics in the University of Edinburgh. Take it in the Words of Dr. GREGORY himfelf, in his Letter to me.

" ASTRUCIUS feems to me to make " use of fuch a Way of Arguing, as may " formerly have gained him a Reputa-' tion R

To the READER.

11

"tion in the Schools of Sophists and Me

" If he is in earnest, which I cannot " be eafily induced to believe, his Judg-" ment upon Contraction and Compression " is widely different from that which " Men of Sense have ever entertained ! " For he allows that all the Parts of a " Circular Fibre upon its Contraction " approach to the Center; and yet de-" nies that any Fibre preffes upon those " Points, which lie between the Fibre: " it felf, and the Center. It is evident: " to me, that if a Circular Fibre be " contracted into the half of its Length, " it ought to compress whatever lies be-" tween it felf and the Center, to com-" prefs it, I fay, into the fourth part " of its Space. After ASTRUCIUS had " taken away the Compressing Powers, " he ought alfo to do the fame by the " Contracting Powers, and fo to prove " by his Argument that there can be no " Contraction at all in a Circular Fibre. " ASTRUCIUS would manage this Point " in the following manner : " There

To the READER. III

" There is no Point in the Circumfe-« rence of a Circular Fibre, but what " may be drawn with an equal Force to " both its Sides, (according to the Di-" rection of the Circumference;) but it " is drawn neither from the Center, nor " to the Center, because the Arches that " lie nearest, and are infinitely fmall, " which attract that Point, attract it at " Angles, that are Rectangles in respect " of the Diameter. Wherefore there is " no Point in the Circumference of a " Circular Fibre that can be moved, " that is, that Fibre cannot be contract-" ed. Which was the Thing to be proved. "ASTRUCIUS has affumed a Part of a " Circular Circumference not different " from a Right Line, which upon Con-

" traction he makes to be altered into a " lesser Right Line, without any Ten-" dency of descending to the Center, " or receding from it. But the Geome-" tricians affume a regular Polygon, whofe " Sides are Right Lines, which must ne-" ceffarily upon Contraction be chan-B 2 " ged

iv To the READER.

" ged into a leffer fimilar Polygon, and by confequence the Sides of it will approach nearer to the Center in proportion to its Contraction.

So far my Friend Dr. GREGORY.

For my Part, I will not call ASTRU-CIUS'S Book Cacata Charta, fince ASTRU-CIUS, in my Opinion, feems never to have gone to Stool, otherwife he must have perceived that the Muscles of the Abdomen have a Power of Contraction and Expulsion.

If Dr. ROBERT GRAY, or Dr. JOHN ARBUTHNOTT, those Scots Æsculapii, and HECQUET of Paris, that Reliever of Mankind, favour these Dissertations, I shall not be at all concerned for the Judgment of any others. For BELLINI is gone to the Celestials.

Some barbarous Expressions, unknown in the Days of CELSUS, have crept into these Differtations, such as frequent Use, and the Poverty of the Latin Tongue, have long since made familiar, and almost necessary to Physicians.

AN





Translated by Dr. SEWELL.



* Leyden.

O one, I prefume, will be difpleafed, if I, who am chosen to the Profefforship of Physic by the Illustrious Administrators of this * Universi-

ty, shall freely, without being fwayed by Favour or Prejudice, lay before my Audience the chief Reasons, why the Art of Physic has so long baffled the Endeavours and Studies of so many Learned Persons; and what Affistances are necessary to be used, to carry B 3 it it to fuch a defirable Height, that the Life of Man may be placed in fuch a Degree of Safety, as his Nature will admit of, and the Powers of Man can fecure to his Fellow-Creature.

This Freedom the Course of my Duty requires of me; this my Profession has made most grateful, and almost necessary for me; and this famous Republic, ever most tenacious of Liberty, fecures my Exercise of fuch a Freedom from any Danger.

2. To deliver then my Thoughts without referve: In my Opinion the Skill of Healing feems to be of greater Antiquity than the Study of Philosophy; because when Men first began both the Study of Phylic and Philofophy, every one being determined to them either on the Account of his Body, or his Mind, the Reafons for Philosophy were only cafual and accidental, but those for Phyfic were perpetual. For the elder Race of Mankind maintained Life in a poor Condition, exposed in the open Fields to the Injuries of the Weather, their first Sustenance being the Products and Fruits of the Earth, their next Advancement to its Creatures the Cattle : They first felt the Inconveniencies of Heat and Cold, that is, they grew fick, before they thought of providing Cloaths and Houfes for themfelves Thefe then were the first Diseases, those the first Remedies. Beside, the Cattle being naturally of a short Exiftence

the Art of PHYSIC.

Existence, and no less obnoxious to Distempers formerly, than now, induced a Neceffity for the Knowledge of Healing; and they who applied themfelves to the Relief of them, were faid to relieve Men too: For he feems to have preferved a Brother, who faved him from the Necessity of perishing, even by Hunger.

But Men then at last addicted themfelves to Philosophizing, when after some Experience of the Efficacy of Remedies, they could in some fort of Security, and at leisure, confider the Qualities of Natural Bodies, and think of excelling the reft of Mankind in the Powers of the Understanding.

3. But fince there are good Grounds to believe, that the antient Phylicians attributed Difeafes to the Anger of the Gods, and that Aftronomy was the first Science which was cultivated by the elder Philosophers, and that the Names of the Gods were at the fame Time affixed to the Stars, it is probable that those antient Physicians began their Enquiries with those Distempers which generally attend upon the Changes of the Seafons. From whence it follows, that according to the Notion of both the Antient Phyficians and Philosophers, the Method of Reasoning in Physic ought to depend upon the fame Principles as are of Use in Astronomy: And fince in those Days all Philosophers B 4

8

phers were of one Sect, and Medicine was elder than all Philofophy, that Phyfic in its Infancy was not tied down and reftrained to any Sect of Philofophers. But I am inclined to explain this Subject by a more curious and exact Enquiry.

4. It is unfair to affert any Thing for Truth, either in the Theory or Practice of Phyfic, which stands in fuch a Degree of Uncertainty, as no Man would willingly have the Security of his Property to ftand : For no one ought to be in lefs Concern for his Life, than his Eftate. From whence this Confequence arifes, that is not allowable to advance any Thing into a Principle either in the Theory or Practice of Phyfic, which the Mathematicians, and Perfons who are the leaft entangled with Prejudice, call in queftion : Because no Man would willingly submit to have his Affairs reduced to fuch a Hazard, that there must be a Necessity for a Disputation, the Success of which is doubtful for the Recovery of them; but of all Things, Life is the most precious.

From all which I draw this Confequence; That fuch Enquiries after Phyfical Caufes as are generally proposed by the Philosophers, are entirely useless and unneceffary to Physicians: For these are Points which the Heads and Patrons of Sects have wrangled about from the Beginning of the World to our Days, and all to no Purpose.

5. Nor

the Art of PHYSIC.

5. Nor ought this to feem ftrange, fince the Patrons of Sects, by attempting the Knowledge of the abfolute Nature, and intimate Effences and Caufes of Things, without any regard to the Difcovery of their Properties, were forced to make use of many Postulata's, and but few Data's, by which means they unavoidably fell into great Variety of Opinions. It is evident to any one who has been a little more than ordinary conversant in the Mathematics, or the Practice of Physic, that our Knowledge of Things is confined to the Relations they bear to one another, the Laws and their Properties of Powers, which enable them to produce Changes in fome Things, and to become altered by other Things: I fpeak of Corporeal Things. Now these Powers, and their Laws, are difcovered by their mutual A ction and Reaction upon each other: For Action and its Confequences are those Data that affist us in the Discovery of the Laws of their Powers; but a Physical Cause, and the Nature of Things which the Philosophers fo much enquire after, is that unknown Something in Things from whence they will have all its Powers and Properties derived. But that being impossible to be known without a prior Knowledge of its Powers, and a Difcovery of their Laws, and no Effects being produceable but by its Powers, it follows, that while they remain unknown, there can be

10 The EXCELEENCY of

be no Knowledge of the Nature of the Thing and when they are known, that Knowledge is of no Advantage. And therefore the Bufinefs of a Phyfician is to weigh and confiden the Powers of Medicines and Difeafes as far as they are difcoverable by their Operations, and to reduce them to Laws; and not lay out their Time and Pains in fearching after Phyfical Caufes, which can never be deduced till after the Laws of their Powers are found out; and when they are found out, will be of no Service to a Phyfician.

6. It was then of no Use to our Predecessors in Phyfic, to have efpoufed any Sect, and corrupted a Science, in its own Nature above the Comprehension of the Vulgar, with uncertain, and very often with false Opinions. By these Errors the Art of Physic has been hindered from attaining a defirable Pitch of Perfection, and feems long fince to be filled and over-burdened with Conjectures, in the Eyes of fuch Perfons who forget to diftinguish, that these Errors are not in the Art it felf, but its Profeffors. For many being weary of the Difputes which, after so long a Course of Years, even to this Day, were occafioned by fuch Perplexities in the common Philosophy, and observing neither Remedy nor End of this Confusion, but that the Infection was still spreading, that the Phyficians struck in with the Vulgar, and went over to a Sect; eafily perfwaded themfelves that those Principles were not

the Art of PHYSIC.

not much depended upon that were founded upon fuch uncertain and contradictory Opinions. This is what hindered the Improvement of Phyfic for fo many Years; and this we must bid farewel to, if ever we intend to be Phyficians or Free, if ever we would be thought never to have been the Slaves of *Rome*, or, at this Time, or any other, not to merit fuch a Slavery.

7. That Art which, of all others promifes Safety and Health to Mankind, ought not in reason to be involved in the Conjectures and Dreams of Disputants; for no Man of common Prudence would intrust his Life to Him, whole Reasoning feems falle to the Generality, and probable but to very few. But Phyficians ought to propose the Method of Aftronomers as a Pattern for their Imitation: These never take up, and adopt into their Science fuch Opinions as are grateful to the Vulgar, or generally received by Orators: Never in the Explication of the Motion of the Planets, call in the Affiftance of a Romantic Hypothesis concerning the Structure of the World, however pleafing and plaufible, but by comparing the Observations which have been made at great Distances of Times and Places, and put together in a Method familiar to them, and useful to all the Phænomena of the Celeftial Motions, and fo compute the Powers and Force which Bodies in Motion observe in their Tendency to

12 The EXCELLENCY of

to other Bodies, either moveable or immove able. Let us, if we are inclined to deferv well of the Republic of Phyfic, that is, on all Mankind, follow this excellent Rule on Theirs. It is our Duty to compare the Obu fervations that have been made by others and continue to be made every where, upon Difeafes and their Remedies, and without any Regard to Opinions, which are nothing in comparison to the certain Conviction off our Senfes, to collect from what usually happens, what will, and what we are to do in that Cafe.

No one now, I prefume, who is the leaft conversant in Astronomy, imagines any Stress to be laid on those Points, which are to this instant puzzled with frivolous Disputes, nor makes any Use of substantial Forms, subtile Matter, or the accidental Concourse of Atoms in the Demonstration of the Affections and Influences of the Celeftial Motions : But the Aftronomers being fatisfied with the Allowances of a few Postulata, plainly shew that the Opinions of the Sects give them no Obstruction; nor are their Demonstrations at all difturbed, whether Substantial-Forms exist, or no, or whether there be any such Thing as Subtile-Matter, or not, in being. And do we still doubt to enlarge the Boundaries of Phyfic by the fame Arts? Neither is it unreasonable to suppose, that lesser Bodies, which are the Objects of Physical Enquiries,

the Art of PHYSIC.

quiries, are fubject to the fame Laws that Aftronomers have difcovered in the greater. The Nature of all Bodies is certainly the fame, and every Body is capable of being changed into the Body of another of any Kind whatfoever; and by confequence all Bodies, of whatfoever Magnitude or Minutenefs, are obnoxious to the common Effects of Motion or Change. From whence it follows, that the Laws and Properties of the Fluids and Canals of Human Bodies may be defined, after we fhall either have made more Obfervations, or compared and methodized thofe that have been already made.

9. Any one who fairly confiders what has been hitherto advanced, will eafily allow, that nothing ought to be used as a Principle in Phyfic, which is not as certain as the Objects of our Senfes; for it is but reasonable that the Care for the Life of Man should exceed that for his Curiofity. This induces me to make some brief Remarks on a few Particulars, which our Predeceffors, out of a fond Prejudice to their Favourite Sects, have admitted for Truth, and yet want the Evidence of Senfe; that others may avoid the committing of those Errors, which have led fo many Great Men out of the Way; and which may almost all be reduced to this one: The affuming fuch Things as certain, which Men of the best Learning and least Prejudice
14 The EXCELLENCY of

dice difpute as doubtful; or fuch Things whofe Certainty does not amount to fo good an Evidence, as the Perception of our Senfes

10. Our Predecessors borrowed from a Sect the Fear of a Vacuum, Occult Qualities. the Power of Attraction uncorrected by any Laws of Acting, and transferred them into the Art of Physic, and endeavoured to impose upon themselves and others by this Axiom That the Physician begins where the Naturalist ends; which, when spoke of the Patron of a Sect, is always falle. Miferable must the View of our Republic appear in those Days, when all was over-grown and choaked with Perplexities of Words and Things: Men of Parts and Genius were obliged ton fubmit to a Tyranny over their Reafon, and bear the most infolent internal Slavery, to give up a vaft Stock of Human Literature, the Toils of long and fevere Studies, to be corrupted and debauched by the Leaders of Sects; and those Heroes were compelled to deliver their Names to be obliterated with those of Sophists, who might have merited the Glory of an eternal Memory, for their Care in preferving their Fellow-Citizens.

11. But however miferable the Condition of Phyficians may appear at that Time, yet is not the Happinels of our Age fo great, as to make us extol our felves fo very much above our Predeceffors: After fo great Improvements in Botany, and Anatomy, and the Ap-

the Art of PHYSIC.

Appearance of a new Face of Things in fo many other Arts, we ftill find the old Standard of Phyfic prevail every where. Our Anceftors were blamed for introducing a Heap of Jargon into our Art, of Things unknown to our Senfes, and confifting entirely of Conjectures, and, in one Word, for too great a Fondness to Sects of Philosophy: We who have shook off this Weight of Stupidity, have, even we, been much more fuccefsful in the Improvement of our Science? Not at at all. But after that Plague, which a Flood of Barbarians had brought upon us for the Destruction of Letters, was dispersed by an incredible Happinefs, and the bright Genius of fome Men had advanced the Affairs of Phyfic to a better Condition, when nothing remained but what we might reasonably have hoped for from the Difcovery of the Circulation of the Blood ; yet was the Succefs which was due to this Difcovery, prevented by a Partiality to a Sect: And thus has this Age envied a Joy nearest to the higheft Mankind ever knew fince their Original.

12. I have often wondered how fo many Learned and Ingenious Men, who could point out the Errors of their Predeceffors to be avoided by others, yet could not themfelves avoid falling into thefe very Miftakes: Let them bear the Honour of banifhing occult Qualities, of fubduing the idle Fears of

a

16 The EXCELLENCY of

a Vacuum, and the noify Jargon of fubstan tial Forms: But yet they have introduced occult Fermentations, and Pores that are obedient to the Word of Command; and their impotent Withes, rather than their honest Studies for Improvement, have brought Things to that pafs, that we long fince have been at a Lofs for Physic, in the midst of Phyfic it felf. For what Difference, I pray, can we make between unknown Figures, and occult Qualities? Or what between the Influences of the Stars, and the Operations, of fubtile Matter? Which reflects most Difhonour on our Profession, to allow the Veffels a Power of attracting fome Liquors, or, when we cannot folve the Difficulty by any other Means, to assume a Power to our felves of Poetical Machinery, and introducing Fluids exactly adapted to the Orifice of the Vessels? Which Hypothesis of the Fear of a Vacuum performs most Wonders for a Sect of Men? His, which gives a Liberty to any Body of running in to prevent a Vacuity in any Place? or his, who has filled the World with a fubtile Matter, which does all that Work by it felf, and which is infinitely minuter than all other Bodies ? Who that has rejected the Sympathy and Antipathy of the Antients, can bear to hear Men difpute of the Contention and Agreement of two different Airs that meet within the Canals of our Bodies ? Who does not plainly fee

the Art of PHYSIC.

fee that the Natural and the Foreign Air perform the fame Feats as the Innate and Adventitious Heats; and that the fame Tale is told over again only in other Words? But I am weary of infifting fo long upon fo evident a Truth. This one Thing I fhall not fcruple to add, That I can prove that there is no Fermentation in the Glands of a Human Body; that all the Pores, and all the Orifices, are of a fimilar Figure; and therefore that the Diverfity of Figures, and Ferments, introduced by the Adherents of a Sect, is of no manner of Ufe in the Theory or Practice of Phyfic.

13. It remains then that we cultivate Phyfic, not under the Difguife of fuch Fictions as thefe, but upon the Trials of Experience; that we fuffer not our felves to be in the leaft Inftance diverted from Truth by an unwary Partiality to a Sect, nor the Honour of our Profeffion lie at the Mercy of the Vulgar, and be governed by their Decifions: But let us at laft exert our felves into Liberty, and let the infamous Mark of *Uncertainty*, ever flowing from a Fondnefs to a Sect, be at laft wiped off, and removed from our Profeffion.

But fince I have affirmed that the Enquiry into Phyfical Caufes is unneceffary to Phyficians, and that Affertion may feem harfh and rude to Philosophers, I have a mind to confirm and illustrate it by an In-C ftance

18 The EXCELLENCY of

ftance that will place this Matter beyon the Hazard of Doubt or Difpute.

14. The Phyficians who have wrote be fore us upon those Diseases of the Eyes, i which there are fome Images that diftun the Sight, make no Scruple of affigning Phyfical Caufe for it, which is the Corput cles that fwim in the watry Humour, which bring in an uncertain Motion and Floatin to all Parts, imprint upon the Retina th Images of Flies, and other Things, that feen to fwim at random before the Eyes. Bu while these People are tracing Mechanica Caufes from their first Original, and search ing after the latent Nature of these Affecti ons, they have neither found out the Cauf they fearched for, nor affigned their prope Symptoms to each particular Diftemper.

15. To make this plain, 1 affirm that ne Corpufcles fwimming in the watry Humour or inclosed within the Eye, can paint any Image of themselves upon the *Retina*; the Proof of which is to be drawn from what is demonstrated by Writers of Optics.

For any one who confiders carefully how very fmall Diameters of the Humours of the Eye must be affumed, and what the Laws of Refraction are, will easily find that the Images of Things placed before the *Retina* in the Eye, are projected wholly without the Eye, and are never imprinted upon the *Retina*, and therefore can never difturb the Sight. But

the Art of PHYSIC.

But to confute the Notion of these Images, and prove that the Corpuscles contained either in the Aqueous or Vitreous Humour, or situated before the *Retina* in any Part of the Eye, neither produce these Images by obscuring the Parts of the Object, nor intercepting the Rays emitted by the Object : Let us remember this Axiom in Optics.

"That there is no Point of a visible Object from which the Rays of Light do not reach to all Points of the *Cornea*, and by confequence, altho' many Parts of the *Cornea* may be obscured, yet all the Parts of the Object will be seen by the Eye."

But if that Point of the Retina, in which the Rays emitted from any visible Point, ought to meet, be by any means so covered, and compressed, as to make its Position unfit to reflect the Image, then there can be no Preception of the Object. And if this Case happens in many Points of the Retina, all those Accidents will follow which Physicians have so long fancied to be effected within the Aqueous Humour : But I will briefly explain the Ways, for there are more than one, how these Phænomena may constantly happen.

16. Every one knows that what we call the *Retina*, is a Sort of Net-Work, whole Texture confifts of a great Number of Fibres of the Optic Nerve, whence these Fibres, attended by the Blood-Vessels, are dispersed

20 The EXCELLENCY of

round the Bottom of the Eye, and that Part o the Eye that lies about the Infertion of the Optic Nerve abounds most with these Veffel Therefore if the Eye is placed in fuch Situ ation, as to make the Rays necessarily fa upon that Part of the Retina, no Representa tion or Preception of that Object can follow We will try the Truth of this Phænomeno. thus : If any two Bodies are exposed to View in the fame Line parallel to the Horizon, and on a Plane that paffes thro' the Eyes a littl higher, and at the Distance of half a Foc from each other: Then fuppofe the Left Ey fhut, and the Right one turned to the Object placed upon the Left Hand; and then let u approach the Object flowly, or recede from them, according as the Nature of our Eye requires. First, we shall perceive that we fe both Objects diffinctly, but at last we shall come to fuch a Point, when the Object placed upon the Right Hand will difappear and yet we shall have a clear View of al Things round it. Now this Cafe happens a that Distance from the Objects, and in tha Situation of the Eye, from the Rays falling upon that Part of the Bottom of the Eye which is fo obfcured and oppreffed by its Reception of the Optic Nerve, and the Blood-Vessels, as to allow no free Room for the Impression of the Image. And in Diftempers of this Nature, other Phanomenas happen after the fame Manner. What makes

me

the Art of PHYSIC.

8

me more politive in this Affertion, are fome Theorems which are of Ule in the explaining the Circulation of the Blood: I have felected the following one, which is applicable to the prefent Cafe.

If the fame *Phænomenon* may arife either from the Liquors flowing within the Veffels, or those without, it ought always to be ascribed to the internal, never folely to the external Fluid. But my Assumption is, that there is no external Force.

17. Thus then I have produced an Instance of Distempers which are not to be accounted for by a Phyfical Caufe; fo that it is evident that Phyficians may know the State of the Part affected, and the Method of Cure, without the Knowledge of those Causes. For my Part, I am fatisfied with the Illustration of any one Property only of Difeases, which may be of Use in explaining their Phanomenas, not pretending fo much as to guess at a Physical Reason, being sufficiently affured no Man living is Mafter of one: For no one will attempt the giving a Phyfical Caufe or a Mechanical Origin for the exciting that Change, which is a Property of the Mind, when Objects propagate Motion by the Mediation of the Nerves.

But however, tho' I know, nor am at all farprized, that the Phyfical Caufes of thefe Symptoms, and their intimate Natures, fhould efcape the diligent Enquiry of Phy-C 3 ficians;

22 The EXCELLENCY of, &c.

ficians, yet I think I have explained eithe their Mathematical or Medical Caufes, tha is, fuch as are most useful for a Physician t know.

I wifh it were in my Power to give a eafy and plain an Explication of all the othe Affections of our Bodies, and deliver a Me thod for their Cure. Could I do this, fhould not defpair of making fome Return to those Illustrious and Learned Governors who have promoted me to the Profession for who have promoted me to the Profession for Members from the most infusferable of all Slaveries, the Tyranny of a Sect.



THE



THE THEORRY OFTHE Distempers of the Eye.



VERY one who understands that Part of Geometry which treats of Vision, knows, that the *Focus* of the Parallel Rays falling from the

Aqueous Humour upon the Sphæra Vitrea, after their Refraction made at the Convex Superficies of the Sphere, is diftant from the Vertex of the Incidence nine Semidiameters of the Sphere: And that the Focus of the fame Rays, after their Emerfion from the Sphere, is diftant from the Sphere three Semidiameters and a half. Wherefore the Rays that are parallel in the Aqueous Humour, after their Refraction at the entire Sphæra Vitrea, included in the Aqueous Humour, C 4 con

24 Of the DISTEMPERS

converge to a Point that is diftant three Se midiameters and a half from the oppofit Superficies of the Sphere; or, what is the fame, of the Point, or *Radiant*, which is diftant three Semidiameters and a half from the Sphæra Vitrea, included in the Aqueou Humour, the Rays come out parallel behind the Sphere; and therefore the Image of that Point or fmall Radiant Body, will be at ai infinite Diftance from the Sphere, and by confequence will not be painted upon the *Retina*, and no Senfation of that Point can be excited in the Organs of Vifion.

Wherefore, allowing the Obfervations in Optics, which prove that the fame Refractions obtain in the Chryftalline Humour, as in the Vitreous, it is manifeft that no Image of the Radiant Body, which is diftant three Semidiameters and a half from the Chryftalline Humour, can poffibly be imprinted upon the *Retina*; but, as is evident, the *Cornea* of no Eye is diftant from the Chryftalline three Semidiameters and a half of the Chryftalline. Therefore no Vision follows from the Position of any Body in the *Cornea*, much lefs in the Aqueous Humour; or the Corpuscles that lie, or fwim there, are imperceptible by the Eye.

From this Demonstration it follows, that in a Suffusion of the Eye no fuch Images of Bodies are perceptible, as the Writers of Phyfic afcribe to a Suffusion, who by a very groß

of the EYES.

groß Mistake have attributed Symptoms entirely foreign to the Diseases of the Eye: But if those Images happen with an Obscurity of Sight at the same time, then an Amaurosis, or what is commonly called a Gutta Serena, will be the Attendant of a Suffusion.

2. Because, if these Flies, Spiders, and fuch Sort of Bodies, seem continually skiming before the Sight, when there appears no Sign of an external Inflammation of the Eye, an *Amaurosis* arises, the Reason of which, and the Method of its being generated, I have more fully declared.

3. If these Images are accompanied with an external Inflammation, there is also an internal Inflammation, and that too fituated in the *Retina* it felf. And as for this, I have long fince made that Observation; for being convinced by Reasons in Optics, that those Images arose from a Defect of the Parts of the *Retina*, being too much covered by the extraordinary *Tension* and Oppression of the Blood-Vessels, I easily found that they who suffered by an Inflammation reaching to the *Retina*, must be affected by the fame Symptoms.

4. And it is true in general, that these Films and Images in an *Amaurofis* arise from the Defect of the *Retina*, which is made unfit for the Reception of the Image, by the too great Distention of some Part of it, and the too

26 Of the DISTEMPERS

too great compressing and covering of other Parts. And becaufe this Symptom of Oppreffion may happen in the Veffels of the Retina in any State or Condition, the Retina will be fubject to the breeding all Sorts of Tumours, that may at any Time affect any other Part. Now in my Opinion, it is evident: to any rational Perfon, that he, who underftands these Things, cures by Art, and not by Chance.

Thus then I have demonstrated in a few Words the Theory of the Difeafes of the Eye, and at the fame time have given an Instance of the Usefulness of Mathematics in Phyfic; for the Method of Cure is eafily to be drawn from this Theory; nor is it lefs plain how much they who make use of Collyriums in these Cases, baffle and impose both upon themselves and their Patients.



To Dr. SEWELL.

SIR,



HERE being some Mistakes in Dr. Pitcairn's THEORY of the DISTEM. PERS of the EYE, I have, according

to my Promife, fent you the following plain and eafy Demonstration of what the Doctor means to prove. This

of the EYES.

This is his Proposition in other Words---

The Muscæ Volitantes, or small Bodies, like Flies or Spiders, which appear to fly or swim about the Air, before the Eye, are not owing to any Bodies in the Aqueous, or any other Humour of the Eye.

LEMMA I.

The Focus of parallel Rays, or burning Point of a Lens of Glass convex on both Sides, is nearer or farther behind the Lens, according as it is more or less convex; nearer behind the Lens, if it be more convex, or a Segment of a lesser Sphere; and farther behind it, if the Lens be less convex, or a Segment of a greater Sphere.

LEMMA II.

If a distant Object, or such an one whose Rays falling upon a Lens are look'd upon as a Parallel, has its Image distinctly projected behind the Lens in its Focus, which is at a determinate Distance; as for Example, at the Distance of an Inch, by bringing the Object pretty near the Glass, the Focus will fly off to a greater Distance, that is, the Image will be projected farther behind the Glass than the fore-mentioned Distance; but if we would have the Image restor'd to the Distance of an Inch, the Object remaining 28 Of the DISTEMPERS

maining still near the Glass, we must substitute another Lens more convex in a due Proportion, (whose Focus of parallel Rays is shorter than that of the former Lens,) and the Image will be distinct at the Distance of an Inch, as before, the Focus of the near Object in this Glass being at the same Distance from it, as the Focus of parallel Rays in the other.

Common Experiments, and the least Tincture in Optics, will prove the Truth of the LEMMAS.

The Rays which coming from a diftant visible Object fall upon the Cornea of an Eye, are by the Coats and Humours of the faid Eye refracted fo as to unite upon the Retina of it, and there project the Image of the faid Object, the Eye doing the Office of a Convex Lens: Now, if the Objest be brought nearer to the Eye, (as for Example,) to the Distance of two or three Feet, and all the Parts of the Eye remain in the fame Position, and of the fame Figure as before, the Rays will be intercepted by the Retina, before they can project a diftinct Image of the Object by their Meeting, which (could they pass on) would be behind the Retina by Lemma ii. But the Eye being made of flexible Coats, and yielding Humours, has the Power to alter its Figure, and become more convex, and fo by that

that Means its Focus is fhorten'd by Lemma i. it being the fame Thing as the fubflituting a more Convex Lens; and therefore by Lemma ii. the Object, tho' brought near, will paint a diftinct Image of it felf on the Retina, and fo the faid Object will be feen diftinctly.

But if the Object be brought very near the Eye, (as for Example,) to the Diftance of four Inches, it will be out of the Limits of diftinct Vision, and no Image will be projected on the *Retina*, the meeting Points of the refracted Rays being far beyond it; neither can they be brought to the *Retina* by making the Eye more convex, because the Eye cannot be made convex enough for an Object at so little a Distance, as any Body may be fensible of, by the Pain that is felt in endeavouring to look at so near an Object.

There are indeed fome fhort-fighted People, whofe Eyes are fo convex, that they can fee diffinctly at that Diffance; but if the Object be brought within half an Inch of their *Cornea*, or elfe to clofe it, it will then be out of the Limits even of their Vision, and no Image at all of fuch an Object projected on the *Retina*.

If then no Object at the Cornea, by reafon of its Nearnefs to the Retina, can be projected upon it, much lefs will any Object under the Cornea, that is, in the Aqueous

30 Of the DISTEMPERS

ous Humour, or in any other Humour of the Eye. Which was to be demonstrated.

The fame Thing may also be proved by two easy Experiments.

Exp. Take a Convex Lens of Glass, and having fet a Candle at any Distance before it, greater than that of its Focus of parallel Rays, the inverted Image of the Candle will fall upon a Paper held behind a Glafs, and be dittinct at a Place eafily found by moving the Paper backward and forward ; then ftick feveral Pieces of Paper upon the Lens, fo that the Places of the Lens which are covered take up as much of it as what is left uncovered, or more, if you will; and then exposing it to the Candle as before, you will have as diffinct an Image as before, though perhaps not fo bright. Though dark Bodies should be within the Lens it felf, as it sometimes happens, if the Glass of which it is made be taken from the Top or Bottom of the Glass-house Pots, the Image will also be diftinet.

Exp. Take the Chrystalline Humour of an Ox's Eye, or any Eye fresh taken out of the Head, and it will project an Image of the Candle as the Lens did, and distinct also, though you stick little Pieces of Paper upon it.

From these Experiments it is plain, that no Bodies, in any of the Humours of the Eye, can project their Images upon the *Retina*.

There

There is another Proof of this, which perhaps has not been taken Notice of before; for which Reafon I mention it, though it is not fo direct as the others.

It is observable, that those which see the Muscæ Volitantes, see them more when they look at a bright Object, or have been juft looking at it, than when they look at a dark Now if Bodies in the Aqueous Huone. mour obstructed some of the Light which comes from the Object, and made Musca Volitantes by hindering it from falling on the Retina, it would be easy for the Eye to open its Pupil, (which is narroweft when the Eye looks at a bright Object,) and take in more Rays. Whereas if the Musca Volitantes appeared more when we look at dark Objects, we could not be help'd by taking in more Rays; becaufe the Pupil is then as open as it can, in order to receive a great many Rays, which are reflected but sparingly by dark Objects.

Now if we fuppofe, with Dr. Pitcairn, that the Fault is in the Retina, which in fome Parts of it is infenfible, or not fenfible enough to the Impulse of the Rays, this *Phanomenon* will be easily explained; for when looking at a dark Object we see it by only a small Impulse on the Retina, the Difference between the Impression on the Sound, and that on difeased Parts is not so fensible; but when the Retina is struck by a strong Light,

32 Of the DISTEMPERS, Uc.

Light, as in the first Case, we are more senfible that the Impression of the Rays is differently received upon the *Retina* diseased in fome Parts.

There are, indeed, fome of those, who are troubled with the Musca Volitantes, that are affected a different Way from what I just mention'd, that is, they fee those small Images very much, when they look at a dark Object, and fcarce perceive them when they look at a bright one: But this will not take off the Force of the Argument us'd in the other Cafe. For in that, fome Parts of the Retina are altogether infenfible, (at leaft for a Time,) and that happens to those who have the Musca Volitantes for a great while together : But in this Cafe the difeafed Parts of the Retina are not fo ftrongly affected or compress'd, as to be altogether uncapable of those Vibrations which they ought to have; but then a small Light, or such as is reflected by a dark Object, is not able to excite them, though when the Eye is turned to a lucid or very fhining Object, fo great a Quantity of Light pushes in upon the Retina, as to caufe fufficient Vibrations in the difeafed, as well as the found Part.

If you think this worth publishing, it is at your Service.

I am, Sir, your most Humble Servant,

J. T. DESAGULIERS.



DISSERTATION

UPON THE

Circulation of the Blood

Through the

Minutest Vessels of the Bopy.



R. HARVEY has informed us, in a System entirely new, and providentially difcovered, that the Blood runs from the Heart through the

Arteries, and returns to the Heart through the Veins: And contenting himfelf with recommending this fingle and general Hypothefis to the Belief of Physicians, has left all theother Particulars in the Dark, and unexplained. But when this was found not to answer sufficiently Medicinal Uses, the Learned began to difpute, D whe-

34 Of the CIRCULATION

whether the Blood was conveyed from the Arteries into fome Parts of the Body, where the Arteries and Veins are difperfed with their Mouths unclosed, and open; or whether the minutest Arteries did not convey the more grofs Blood for the Nutriment of the Parts, but only the thinner Part which was not to return to the Heart, and all the reft of the Blood paffed through the largest Arteries into the Veins, which are connected to them by Anastomosis. It is plain to any Observer, that either of these Hypotheses contradict the Circulation of the Blood : For the first empties a large Quantity of the thicker Blood, (that is, fuch as is contained in the greater Veffels,) into the Parts of the Body, or rather the Interstices of the Parts: The fecond empties the thinner Part of the Blood, (that is, what is contained in the leffer Arteries,) which is appropriated to the Nutriment of the Parts, that is, it supposes that a great Part of the Blood does not circulate, but, as they express themselves, is detained and stagnated in the Viscera, and the Pores of the Parts. But fince all the Blood is forced by the Impulse of the Heart, and the Arteries into a circular Motion, infomuch that while they act with their proper Vigour, the Blood cannot be at reft, it is evident, that it is impossible it should stagnate in the minuteft Vessels, which must necessarily burft by the continual Accession of the Blood, or muft

of the BLOOD.

must be fwelled to an extraordinary Degree by that Blood which is not to be conveyed thro' the Veins; which Accident never happens to any Animal in a State of Health: And it is as plain, that it is not detained in the Pores, upon account of the continual Increase which, for the fame Reason, must necessarily follow. For the more Blood that was dispersed in the Pores, the greater would be the Difficulty of its Returns from the Stoppage of the Veins by the circumambient Fluid, as shall be proved in the following Discourse.

2. As the Phyficians, of all Men, feem covetous of new Discoveries, so they are commonly taken with the Novelty of Terms: Thus there arole a Set of Men, who obferving that there was a Sort of Glandulous Fleih bundled up in the Viscera, and which was provided with all Sorts of Veffels, they made no Scruple of affirming, that there are Glands in all Parts of the Body, which receive the Blood from the Arteries, and tranfmit it unaltered into the Mouths of the Veins, which open even within the Glandulous Substance, while they fend another Part of it, which is fit for Separation, thro' its proper fecreting Veffel. But this Hypothefis has brought nothing new into Phyfic, but only the Use of a Term. For this is all that it amounts to, the calling a Gland that Medium, which the Antients call'd fome-D 2 times

36 Of the CIRCULATION

times the Parts and Substance of the Body, fometimes the Anastomosis, and which they would have to bear, properly, neither the Name of a Vein or Artery. This Notion, as was unavoidable, is preffed too with the fame Inconveniencies; for as it has yet only appropriated the Arteries and Veins to open into the Cavity of the Gland, the Vein can only receive again a Part of the Blood, the reft will partly be excerned, and partly ftagnated, to maintain the Substance and Nutrition of the Parts, which is entirely contradictory to the Circulation of the Blood, and is proved falfe after the fame Way of Reasoning, as we made use of in the preceding Paragraph.

3. But fince it is evident, that the Notions of Men ought to be fuch as are applicable to the Uses of Life, and not the Vanity of Difpute; therefore we may chiefly collect the Opinions of Phylicians about the Circulation from the Books they have writ upon the Art of Cure. In those most of them difcover their Belief of the frequent Extravafation of the Blood from the Mouths of the Hæmorrhoidal, Meferaic, and other Veins; which Opinion they could never embrace who had any Knowledge of the continual Motion of the Blood from the remotest Veins toward the Heart. But all Phyficians who have prefcribed any Method of Practice agreeable, as they would have it thought,

of the BLOOD.

thought, to the Circulation, unanimoully agree in affirming that the Blood either stagnates in the Parts, or in the Glands; and because the Blood, whether of the thicker or thinner Texture, when detained in the Interstices of the Parts, might fuffer and induce all the fame Symptoms as were obferved in the Blood by the Antients, who knew nothing of the Circulation ; therefore the fame Method of Cure which the Ancients made use of is almost every where followed by the Moderns, altho' generally contradictory to Experience and the Laws of the Circulation. For this Reafon we are not to wonder why no greater Alteration is made in the Practice of Phyfick, fince most Difeases arife from some Diforder of the Circulation in the leffer Veffels, which many of the Moderns plainly demonstrate they understand no better than Hippocrates and Galen.

4. But altho' many Fluids are feparated from the Blood, which are never reftored to it again, and fo cannot be faid to circulate, yet there is a Neceffity for fome Motion of theirs dependent upon the Circulation of the Blood, fo that if their Motion ceafes, this too muft either fink into an immediate or a gradual Stagnation. Wherefore all Fluids that are fecreted from the Blood, preferve fome conftant Motion towards the fame Parts, though at fometimes a very flow one, as being preffed by the Blood, which too is flowing con-D 3 tinually

38 Of the CIRCULATION

tinually towards the fame Parts. From whence it follows, that those who attribute: no Motion at all to the Fluids fecreted by the Blood, or an arbitrary Motion to any Parts, either do not admit of the Circulation of the Blood, or do not understand it. Nor will it appear strange, that fuch Physicians agree with the Practice of the Antients ; and tho' they boaft of the Circulation, yet that our Art owes very little to their Improvements: For the Circulation of the Blood is not more. neceffary for the Prefervation of Life, than its perpetual Supplies of the Secretion of abundance of Fluids, and its Disposal of them into different Parts; and the Caufes of most Difeases are to be look'd for in the Diforder of this Secretion, either as it is increased or diminished; infomuch, that he, who keeps to the Opinion of the Antients in the Business of Secretion, ought to practife after the fame Method, as being ignorant of the Effects of the Circulation. Infinite is the Number of those who diffent from Dr. Harvey's Demonftrations, among whom Dr. Willis is his most eminent Oppofer. It feems to have been the Defign of this Perfon, to have endeavoured to overturn the Foundations of the Art of Phyfic, by the Reputation of his Learning, and his exceffive Praises of Philosophy; for his Books are full of nothing but old Notions difguifed under new Forms; and all his boafted Philosophy depends upon the uncertain

of the BLOOD.

tain wandering of the Blood to all Parts of the Body, and particularly upon the voluntary Motion and Refluence of his Nervous Liquor through all manner of Passages. Let any one look upon the Books he has published, his Pathologia Cerebri, his Treatifes de Morbis Convulsivis, and his Pharmaceutica Rationalis, where the Animal Spirits which are to produce the Vertigo, Epilepfy, Convullive Motions, are ordered to move thro' the Pores, and any Interstices of the Parts, backwards and forwards, and in a Circle, (and by his good Will, he would have drove them into many other Curve Lines, had he known their Names,) fince he had either forgot or defpifed the Knowledge of the Structure of the Brain, the Nerves, and the Laws of Circulation. But in other Diftempers he makes Animal Spirits of a heavy Nature, and disposed to fleep; fometimes he attributes Perception to them, at others a Quality, like the Waters of Styx, and all entirely foreign to Fluids circulating in an Animal Body.

5. But Phyfic ans of greater Sagacity feem to have avoided these Mistakes, and these will have all the Blood strained through the Glands, and part of it to return into the Veins, and the rest to be disposed of without the Glands into the secreting Vessel. And so, as if they had agreed the Matter before-hand, that some, at least, might fall into the Right, they took different Paths in their D 4 Enquiries;

39

40 of the CIRCULATION

Enquiries: They who cry up Chymical Medicines, attribute a certain Native Liquor to every Gland, which they diffinguish by the Name of a Ferment, that is, some fluid Particles, that feparating from the Blood as foon as it is made, pass off into Recepticles agreeable to their Texture, to which they are carried by a natural Tendency, that is, a Tendency of Affimilation. Such as they order the Matter, is the Quality of this Ferment, that the Blood, or the Part of the Blood, which is fo feparated, may be changed immediately into a Fluid of a different Quality; fuch a one as is observed to proceed from that Gland, or a familar Bundle of Glands. Thus, for Inftance, they affirm, that part of the Blood being carried to the Glands of the Liver, is, by the Force of the Ferment of the Liver, which Ferment is innate, and congenial to the Glands of the Liver, immediately altered into mere Bile. The Maintainers of this Opinion are forced to fay, the fermenting Liquors stagnate in any Part, and fo cannot allow any Circulation of their Ferments; tho' to affirm that Fluids can come to a Confiftence, and in a State of Stagnation, can mix with the circulating Fluids; without circulating themselves, is contrary to the Circulation of the Blood, the Prefervation of Life, and the Nature of Things.

6. Yet I cannot help wondering, that there should have been any who could have believed

of the BLOOD.

believed that the Business of Secretion could be performed merely by the Affiftance of Ferments: For though that Opinion (which grants that all Fluids contained in an Animal Body are either impelled in a Circle, or in some direct Line of Motion, and that no Fluid can naturally be in a State of Reft or Stagnation) were not contrary to the Circulation of the Blood, yet other Things besides Ferments are made use of for the Office of Secretion, that is, for the Prefervation of the Circulation of the Blood; other Things, I fay, which, however, when admitted plainly, demonstrate the Impossibility of Ferments, as shall be shewn hereafter. But they who have embraced this Hypothesis, though in Words they acknowledge the Circulation of the Blood, yet in Effect they have deftroyed it : For how do their Opinion, who fay that the Blood is detained in all the Glands till it is changed by the congenial Ferment, differ from the Antients, who taught that the Blood affumed different Qualities in different Places, and was affected by the natural Warmth, or particular Temperature of the Parts? Or what more fuccefsful Method of Cure could one proceed upon than the other ? Whatever are the Grounds upon which they prefer themfelves to the Ancients, they are all, to a Man, either ignorant of the Circulation it felf, or the Effects and most noble Uses of it. And

42 Of the CIRCULATION

And, indeed, fince these Ferments have nothing to do with the solid Parts of the Vessels, but the Fluids secreted from the Blood, the Secretion must necessarily be at one Time performed without their previous Assistance, and therefore may be always so, without their Assistance.

The fame Method of Reafoning confutes those, who affert that the Bile is fecreted in the Kernals of the Liver, becaufe it unites it felf with the Bile naturally implanted in those Kernels, but will not mix with the Urine contained in the Glands of the Kidneys, depending upon the Experiment of a Paper, which, tinctured with Oil, will not let Water pass thro' it, and which, if it be first wetted with Water, the Oil will not pafs. Becaufe it is evident from what has been before fhewn, that this Native Bile is to be accounted a Native Ferment, and by confequence ought to be entirely removed by the Force of the Circulation, and washed away by fucceeding Fluids of any Sort whatfoever. Befides, it may be united to every Fluid contained in the Blood, as being before joined to all the Fluids of which the Blood is compounded, and fo cannot poffibly refuse a Union with any of them: For I do not intend to difpute here concerning the Attractive Forces.

7. Thus they who were not fatisfied with those Chymical Ferments, but fell into a Method

Method of explaining this Difficulty more agreeable to the Mechanics, and the new Philosophy, invent these Means for the Secretion of a Fluid from its Union with the Blood. For it being allowed on all Hands, that the Animal Blood is compounded of a Mixture of many Fluids, and that every one of these Fluids (if homogeneous) confists of fimilar Particles, and of a different Figure and Bulk from the Particles that compose any other Fluid; or (if heterogeneous) of Globules that contain Particles of different Figures and Bulk, and different too from the Figure and Bulk of other Fluids ; they have supposed that there are within the Glands Bodies of a Sieve-like Form, to which the Arteries convey the Blood, which upon its Arrival there adapting it felf to the Holes of that Figure, which is peculiar to the Mafs of the Fluid, it conveys or forces fome Part of the Blood into those Holes, in order to be carried off to the Secreting Veffels, while the other Fluids return again thro' the Veins: So that the Pores of the Glands must be of different Figures in different Parts of the Body, according to the Diverfity of the Figure of the Parts of every Fluid contained in the Blood. This whole Basiness is illustrated by the Instance of a Sieve, which gives a free Passage to one Sort of Grain, and yet stops another Sort, not larger, but of a different Figure; and again by the Inftance of

44 Of the CIRCULATION

of a Strainer, that is pervious by fome kind of Fluids, while others which feem of a finer Texture cannot pafs. And there have been fome who have joined this laft *Hypothefis* with the former of innate Ferments; and their Way of Reafoning ought indeed to be followed by all the Patrons of Ferments.

8. For whatfoever kind of Ferment we fuppofe in every particular Gland, which is capable of changing the Blood impelled thither into a new Form and different Body, yet upon that Change, it ought to affume fuch a Figure, as is agreeable to the Orifice of the fecreting Veffel proper to that Gland, and which ought to be fo framed, as to exclude all Bodies of a different Figure; otherwife any Body of a fufficient Subtilty may pass thro' it without any Affistance from the Ferments: To prevent which, all this plaufible Tale of Ferments is brought upon the Stage, and all this Reasoning upon the Diverfity of the Figures in the Pores received with great Applause. Upon this Account the Authors of the first Hypothesis of a definite Number of Ferments, are obliged to have Recourfe to the fecond of definite Number of Pores: For they having fupposed different Ferments in different Glands, which feem neceffarily to require Sieve-like Substances of a Variety of Figures, or Receptacles more agreeable to one Ferment than another, there was no Reason for their difallowing

of the BLOOD.

allowing the fecond Hypothefis, but their not understanding it. But however contradictory they may feem, who embrace the first and deny the fecond Opinion, yet still the fecond has brought no real Advantage to Physic, because the Assertors may frame at their own Pleasure any Figures in the Parts of Fluids and Pores answerable to them; neither can they be refuted, fince they are so fmall as not to be the Objects of Sight. And thus it was easy for the Slaves to a Sect to adapt Pores and Reasonings to the Principles of the Galenists, however in themselves unfound.

9. There are two Reasons which feem to have inclined the Affertors of the fecond Opinion to make the Variety of Secretions daily observed in a found Animal, depend upon the Diverfity of the Figures. First, because they fancied, from the Instance of the Sieve, that fome Bodies might pass thro'. and others, tho' not of a larger Size, could not, if there were only a Diverfity of Figures allowed. In the fecond Place, if it were not as they supposed, they could give no Reafon why Sweat and other (if there are any) thinner Fluids, fhould not pafs thro' the Orifices appropriated to fecrete and carry off the groffer Fluids, which would endanger Life. The Grounds of this Fear, more infignificant than the Fear of a Vacuum, fhall be removed at the End of this Differtation. Now we must examine the Instance

Of

46 Of the CIRCULATION

of the Sieve; and let us suppose a Sieve perforated with Circular Holes. If in this Cafe you apply spherical Solids of no greater Diameter than the Diameter of the Holes, they will pass, and run thro'. But if you apply to the Holes Grains of Corn, or any other Body of greater and leffer Diameters than the Holes, the greatest of which is greater than the Diameter of the Hole, the least is not, than they will not pass and run thro', if the largest Diameter happens to come parallel to the Diameter of the Hole; which is only a fingle Cafe in this Inftance: Becaufe they may be fo apply'd, that the leffer Diameter shall fall parallel to the Diameter of the Hole, or if not parallel, it may be inclined at any Angle; and these Angles being infinite, produce an infinite Variety of Cafes. And thus, without any regard to the Figure, this boafted Argument of the Sieve is eafily confuted. Wherefore to place the whole Matter in the clearest Light; let A signify the Conditions of Admission; E, the Conditions of Exclusion; q the Turns of Admission; p the Turns of Exclusion; then the Quantity fought for will be $\frac{Aq+Ep}{q+p}$, as is evident from the Demonstration of the Great Huygens. And fince, as is proved, the Quantity p is finite, but q is infinite, therefore p is loft, and the Product will be $\frac{Aq}{q}$, and by confe-

quence

of the BLOOD,

47

quence the Cafe of Admission will always happen.

10. Whoever attentively confiders how great a Portion of our Blood is of a watry Subtility, or rather a watry Fluidity, not to fay entirely watry, and which Water, or any Thing of an aqueous Fluidity and Gravity, can by Degrees and by a gentle Heat eafily rarify and separate into any, even the minutest Particles; or if he confiders the Nature of a Fluid, he will foon allow, that the Blood which flow thro' our Veffels by the Force imprefied upon it by the Motion of the Heart, may be separated into Particles much more minute than the Orifices which it meets with in its Courfe; and yet every one of these separated Particles may be a Fluid, and perhaps a Compound of other heterogeneous Fluids; for every Fluid ought to be accounted a Body confifting of an infinite Smallnefs of Parts; which however, in different Fluids requires a different Force, to caufe a Separation of those Parts: So that the minutest Solids of Fluids are not fecreted in the Veffels and Glands, but the Fluids themfelves, tho' fometimes but in a small Quantity: For it is not to be imagined, that the Force impressed by the Motion of the Heart and Arteries is fo great, as to be able to separate the minutest Parts of the smallest Fluid from an Union with the reft; for if fo, we should meet with Volatile Salts inftead of Blood, dif-

48 Of the CIRCULATION

difperfed thro' all the greater Arteries. But it is evident that Fluids do not require any peculiar or regular Figure, fince they can adapt themfelves to any Figure, and penetrate any Orifice, fuppoling the impelling Powers ftrong enough to break the Cohefion of the Fluid at the Entrance of the Orifice. From whence it follows, that if Fluids are fecreted from the Blood of the Animal in a State of Fluidity, that there is no Occasion for any peculiar Configuration of the receiving Orifice, but that any will ferve, if it be but large enough; neither are the Figures of the minuteft Parts of the fecreting Fluid of any Confequence in the Performance of the Work of Secretion.

11. But suppose they are not Fluids, which are fecreted in the Glands from the Blood in a State of Fluidity, but that they are minute Solids, which being reaffembled and brought out of many fmall fecreting Veffels into a larger, compose a Fluid Body, let us fee what is requisite to put these in Motion. Here they assume, that the Orifice will admit and give a Paffage to only a Body of a given Figure and Magnitude, excluding all others whatfoever; which is evidently falfe: For if the Body to be admitted is leffer than the Orifice, and can be fo placed within it, that all its Sections paffing thro' Planes parallel to the Orifice, are leffer than the Orifice given; then not only that Body, but an . infinite

of the BLOOD.

infinite Number of others of any Figure may enter and pafs that Orifice. And tho' we fuppose the greatest Section of the Body fimilar, and equal to the Figure of the Orifice given, yet becaufe a great many different Bodies when cut bear the fame Figure, therefore many different Bodies may pass thro' the fame Orifice, or many different Secretions may be made thro' the fame fecreting Veffel. And thus this Hypothefis about the Neceffity and Convenience of the Figure of the Pores, falls to the Ground. Thus, for inftance, thro? the fame Circular Orifice there paffes not only a Sphere, all whofe Sections are fimilar, and equal to the Circle of the Orifice, but a Cone and a Cylinder upon an equal Bafis; and thro' the fame Triangular Orifice there paffes a Pyramid, a Prism, and a Cone, whose greatest Sections passing thro' a Plane parallel to the Orifice, are equal Triangles, and fimilar to the Triangle that makes the given Orifice.

12. Befide, tho' there were no Obstruction to the Admission of a Body into an Orifice of a given Figure and Magnitude, from the Magnitude and Simitude of that Body, yet the Situation alone may be an Obstruction. For suppose a *Cone* is to enter a given Triangular Orifice, altho' the Triangle measuppose the Axis of the assumed *Cone* is not bigger than the given Orifice, but exactly similar and equal to it, or even much less, E vet
yet it is moreover requisite for that Section of the Cone to be fituate parallel to the Orifice, and the Polition must be fimilar while the Body approaches to it, or otherwife it cannot possibly enter. But it may happen infinite Ways, and all equally feafible, both that the Section may approach in a different Polition, and that Sections of different Figures may be applied to the Orifice; becaufe, beside a Triangle passing thro' a Plane parallel to the Plane of the Orifice, there is an infinite Number of Bodies, and great Diverfity of Figures, which may be all Sections of a given Cone, fince a Triangle is only one Section of a Cone. And thus, there is but one fingle Cafe wherein the affumed Cone can pass thro' the Orifice given; but there are two Ways an infinite Number of Cafes equally easy and credible, in none of which it can poffibly pafs. After the fame Manner. if a Cube, suppose of Salt, be apply'd to a fquare Orifice, every where fimilar and equal, but yet not parallel in its Situation. fo that Side and Side, and Angle and Angle, exactly agree, the Cube in this Cafe will not be fecreted thro' the given Orifice ; but it may happen infinite Ways, that either the Angle may ftrike against the Side, (altho' the Surface is parallel to the Orifice,) and in none of those Cases it can pass; or that the Surface may not be parallel to the Orifice, (altho' it agrees in all other Things,) and in none of

of those can it pass. The fame may be affirmed of any Solid, except a Sphere; for all the Sections of that, with the Planes passing thro' its Center, and parallel to any Plane, are Figures equal and fimilar, and of the fame Situation, that is, equal Circles : So that a Sphere is the only Figure among Solids, which passes thro' a given Orifice at any Situation, as a Circle is the only one of plane Figures that admits a passing Body of any Figure, and at any Position, supposing the greatest Diameter of that Body is not larger than the Diameter of the Circle.

13. From all which I draw this confequence; That if there is a Necessity for an Agreement of the Pores and the Parts in the Work of Secretion, that no Secretion at all would ever be performed : But fince we perceive that frequent and large Secretions are daily and neceffarily made in every Animal, we must allow that there is no fuch Thing as that fancied Agreement in the Figures of the Pores, and the Particles fecerned, as being what would entirely obstruct the Bufinels of Secretion. And the Force of this Reasoning is founded upon this: If there be only one fingle Caufe to make any Secretion at all, and there are infinite Caufes to obstruct it; and if every one of these is as powerful as that fingle one, we must conclude that that Secretion is never performed at all. And this Argument depends upon the E 2 fame

fame Evidence and Neceffity, as that Conclufion does of our allowing him abfolutely the Winner at the Game of Dice, who generally wins.

And to finish this Matter after the same Manner as we used in the foregoing Paragraph,

Let A fignify the Conditions of Admiffion, E the Conditions of Exclusion, q the Turns of Admiffion, p the Turns of Exclusion: then the Quantity answering Expectation will be $\frac{Aq + Ep}{q + p}$, as is plain from the Demonstrations of the Great Huygens. And because the Quantity q is finite, but p is infinite, as we proved in the 12th Paragraph; therefore q is lost, and the Product will be $\frac{Ep}{p}$, that is, E; and so by consequence the Cafe of Exclusion will always happen. Which was the Thing to be proved.

14. But there is another irremovable Difficulty against this Secretion thro' Pores of a different Figure: For, to instance, a Cylinder may enter and fill the Orifice of a Parallelogram, if the Parallelogram generating the Cylinder be equal to the Orifice, fimilar, and of the fame Position. But such a Cylinder will enter and fill a Circular Orifice, if the Basis of the Cylinder is equal to the Orifice, and in the same Position. Wherefore, if we allow that Bodies swimming in

a

a Fluid do generally approach the Orifices obverting their greatest Sections of the fame Polition, (which Concellion ruins our Opponents,) then the fame Bodies may be fecreted thro' Orifices of a different Figure, and with the fame Facility. Again, the fame Cone, according to its different Polition, will enter and fill a Pore or Orifice of a Triangular, Parabolical, Hyperbolical, Circular, Eliptical, and an infinite Diversity of other Figures. Therefore allowing the fame Pofition as before, the fame Secretion will be made naturally, and with an equal Facility, thro' different Places, and different Glands. Which is contrary to Obfervation, and is a direct Contradiction to the Inventers of this Diversity of Pores.

15. It feems evident therefore, that the Orifices of our Veffels, and the Pores of the Glands and Parts of our Bodies, do not differ in respect of Figure, but in the Largenels and Extent of Figure. Give me leave then to repeat here our former Observation, that a Circle is the largest and most capacious Figure of all Figures upon the fame Diameter, and that it admits the Planes of all Figures in any Position whatfoever, provided they are not of a greater Diameter. Wherefore fince it is infinitely more probable, that Bodies of fo many different Figures being conveyed to an Orifice not circular, will not fit it; and it is plain too, that those Bodies E 3 will

will by their Force and Motion change the Figure of the objected Orifice into fome other, which will give Paffage to them in any Pofition and Figure, that is, they will change it into a Circular. And this will happen much fooner, and more certainly, if they are Fluids which are to enter the Orifice, and be fecreted there : For tho' the Orifice were not a Circle, yet fince the Parts near to the Centre, that: is, the Sides, are more preffed and dilated by the entring Fluid, than those which are more remote, that is, the Angles and Sides of the Orifice are more flexible and apt to give way, it follows then, that all the Parts of the Orifice ought necessarily to be dilated at equal Diftances, and equally remote from the Center; and by confequence the Orifice will change to a Circle.

But I am willing to give a farther Proof of this Matter to the favourable Reader: If a Fluid is forced down into the Cavity of a Tube with a great Force, that is, a Force far exceeding the Gravity of the Fluid, it is evident from Reafon, and confirmed by frequent Experiment, that the perpendicular Force toward the Sides of the Tube is always joined to the Motion of the Tube towards its Length, which Force endeavours on all Sides, from the very Axis of Motion, to propel outwards, and that with an equal Force ; becaufe there can be no Reafon giyen why the Preffure fhould be greater towards

wards fome Parts of the Axis, and leffer towards others, but that Reason which may be drawn from the Gravity of the Parts of the Fluid, which the Question supposes of no Moment, on Account of the other fuperior Force which impels the Fluid. Now this Force is eluded, and the Tube for all that retains its proper Figure, if the Sides of it are ftrong, and not much elastic, unless the Pressure be with so great a Force, as to break the Force of the Cohefion of the Parts, in which Cafe the Sides of the Tube burft, and fall to Pieces. But if the Sides are flexible, elastic, and apt to give way, then it is impoffible but that the Force must have its due Effect, and propel the Sides to equal Diftances, on every Part from a given Point of the Axis; and those Distances must be of fuch a Length, that the Tention of the propelled Sides, and the Elafticity, will now become powerful enough to fuftain the Shock of that Force. In which Cafe, whatever Figure the Tube had at first, it will afterwards be changed into a different one, all whose Sections perpendicular to its Axis will be Circles of a greater or lesser Diameter, according to the greater or leffer Force of the Fluid, or the greater or leffer Flexility, of the Tube in its different Parts. Now fuch kind of Tubes, and of fuch a Flexility, are all the Veffels in an Animal Body, and thro' thefe the Engine of the Heart propels all the Fluids with fuch

E 4

2

a Force, as far exceeds the Gravity of the Fluids propelled.

16. There will appear then no Diverfity between the Figures of the Pores and Veffels in an Animal Body, fince they are all circular, but only the Diverfity in respect of their greater and leffer Diameters, which is a Difference that must have been allowed, whether we had called in the Operation of Ferments, or the Structure of Pores of different Figures. And this Simplicity, and those few Postulata's which diftinguish our Hypothesis, is a genuine Evidence of that Truth, which the greatest and best Geometrician has been pleased to affix to it. For a good Geometrician never teaches to build a Problem in a perplexed Method, which may be done in a plain and fimple One. And fince my Difcourse has led me to mention Geometricians, I cannot forbear congratulating this Age, and our Science, upon its producing many and great Improvers of Geometry to fo high a Pitch, but particularly Sir Ifaac Newton; fince we must justly hope, that by the Affiftance of the Principles demonstrated by that Great Man, the Powers and Properties of Bodies ferviceable to Medicinal Ufes and the Comfort of Mankind, may be difcovered with greater Eafe, and reduced to a greater Certainty. Nor do I difown that the Art of Physic pleases me not so much on any other Account, as its being capable of bearing the

the Method of Geometry in the fame Manner, as all those other Arts which determine the Powers of Bodies; so that I cannot help pitying those who accuse the Nature of Bodies as a mean ignoble Subject, fince the Geometricians demonstrate, in the most convincing Method, such a beautiful and so infinite a Number of their Properties.

17. But to return from whence I digreffed : Since all the Orifices of all our Veffels are of the fame Figure, that is, Circles, all the Pores of the Glands too must be circular, (I call those glandulous Sieves or fecreting Mouths of the Glands, Pores, in this Place,) and by Confequence there are no pecutiar Receptacles of Ferments, and no Ferments at all in an Animal Body. And indeed, fince we have proved the Orifices of all our Vessels similar, the Ferments can in this Cafe contribute nothing to Secretion, but the Comminution of the Blood into Particles of a proper Smallnefs. But it is plain that this may be performed only by the Action of the Lungs, the Force of the Heart, and the Compression of the minutest Arteries. For if thefe Ferments are not mixed with the Blood, they cannot be the Caufe of any Separation of Particles in the Blood, that is, they cannot be the Caufe of any Secretion; but if they are mixed with it, they will be carried by the Force of the Harvean Circulation thro' all the Veffels of the Body; and any

any Ferment will caufe a Secretion in any Place fimilar to the Secretion of its original Place, unlefs you fuppofe that it is obftructed by the Diverfity of Figures, (as we advifed thefe Patrons of Ferments to affert in our eight Paragraph;) which Opinion we have already refuted and difcarded.

18. From what has been proved I draw this farther Consequence, That there is no intermediate Space or Body between the Evanescence of an Artery, and the Rife of a Vein, which can either be called the Pores or Interstices of the Parts, or reckoned as a Gland, that is, fuch a Space between which the Mouths of the Artery or Vein stand diftinctly unclosed and open. For the Blood evacuated into that Space or Body would much more eafily compress and force the Sides of the Membranes which compose the Mouths of the Vein to a Contact, than enter into that Mouth; and then the Blood would not return thro' the Veins to the Heart: But it does return, and thro' them too; wherefore there is Neceffity for their Mouths to be joined, and connected to the Mouths of the Arteries; for there is no fuch Thing as that diffinet Gland of the Porifts, that intermediate between a Vein and an Artery, furnished with Pores and Orifices, or abounding with Ferments of different Figures, according to the Diversity of the Parts; but that Gland which is ferviceable in Secretions,

59

tions, is Part of the Veffel which forms that Vein and Artery, and the Veins are nothing but Arteries turned back toward the Heart with a contrary Direction. From whence it follows, that no Parts of a human Body, befides the Veins and Arteries, require a Reparation, for Supply of which the Blood fhould be diverted either thro' the open Mouths of the Veffels, or Pores of the Coats, from its glorious Tract difcovered by Dr. Harvey.

19. But altho' there are no fuch Glands as the Porists fancy, yet for the better Regulation of our Dispute, we shall call that Part of the Arterial Curvature from whence the first Root of the secreting Vessel arises a Gland. Wherefore we proceed to remove the fecond Difficulty which we mention'd, which feems to have induced a great many to fall in with the Hypothesis of the various Figure of the Pores. Becaufe there are fecreting Vessels of a different Amplitude opening into different Arteries, yet the Arteries and Veins are equally full of fome Fluid; and because the antecedent Blood in the Veins refifts that which is to follow thro' the Arteries, more than a Fluid already conveyed into the fecreting Veffels does that which is to follow thither, that being relifted only by the Air, which will eafily give way; (I fpeak now particularly of Secretories that discharge their Fluids without the Animal :) Therefore whatever Fluids can meet with Secre-

Secretories large enough will separate at the fame Time from all the Arteries. So that, while the thinner Fluids will pass from one Artery, or the Section of an Artery, thro' the fecreting Veins, which at the fame Time deny Passage to the grosfer Fluids, these groffer, or comparatively groffer, will pass thro' the larger secreting Veins, either from another Artery, or a Section of the fame. I do not here difpute of the Fluids which are difcharged thro' the Lymphatic Vessels and the Nerves, it being fufficient to observe upon them, that there is fuch a Refource of Fluids in the Blood adapted to fupply those Vessels, that they cannot all at one Time be directed to any Part. But I return to the fecreting Veffels, those that are called fuch in the common Acceptation, because they carry the Fluid to be difcharged without the Body. Now they are supposed to be generated either by the conglomerate Glands, fuch are the Kidneys and Liver, or from the conglobate, fuch are, in my Opinion, the cuticular Glands. Thefe, I suppose, carry off the thinner, and those the groffer Fluids; and it is evident that the Orifices of the former are larger than those of the latter, as the Number of the latter is greater than that of the former: For it is requisite, that the Number and Bulk of the Veffels of the larger Orifices, should bear such a Proportion to the Number and Bulk of the Veffels

fels of the leffer Orifices, as to make it impoffible for all the thinner Fluids to pafs at once thro' the Passages admissive of the groffer. But I would have it observed here, that the Secretions which are the Subject of this Difcourfe, do not include the Excrements, which are discharged thro' the Alvus, and never enter the Venæ Lacteæ, fince we difpute here only of those Secretions which are performed within the Animal it felf, and arife from the Supplies of the circulating Blood; for as for those in the Stomach and Inteffines, they happen without the Animal. Let us in the last Place remember, that pure Secretions very rarely happen, but that most commonly one is mixed and tinged a little with another, and that the groffer Part is dilated by the thinner, which is fecreted at the fame Time.

20. And now for the Illustration of this Point, it will be of use to observe, that

I. If the Vessels are equal in Number in two Places, and each of an equal Distance from the Heart, the Quanity secreted in the first Place ought to be to the Quantity secreted in the second, as the Sum of the Orifices in the first is to the Sum of the Orifices in the second, since there is nothing beside which can cause any Difference.

II. And then, if the Orifices are equal, the Quantity secreted in the first Place ought to be

be to the Quantity secreted in the second, as the Number of the secreting Vessels in the first is to the Number of secreting Vesfels in the second, since there is nothing beside which can cause any Difference.

And from hence (for we have omitted the Celerity, as supposing that equal from the Circulation of the Blood) any one by the Affistance of the common Elements of Arithmetic may compare the Quantities of any Secretions with others of a different Evacuation, that is, those which pass thro' the greater or leffer Veffels. It appears plainly, from what has been demonstrated, that, in whatfoever Animal the Orifices of the Veffels appropriated for the Secretion of the groffer Fluids, all taken together, more exceed the Orifices of the Veffels fecreting the thinner, than the Number of these exceed the Number of those, more will be difcharged from that Animal by fensible, than by insensible Evacuation. But fince this never happens to a human Body in a State of Health, it is neceffary that the Proportion of the Orifices in that Body fhould not exceed the inverted Proportion of the Number. Sothat we may fafely infer, if the Veins fecreting the thinner, are in Number to those fecreting the groffer Fluids, as 4 to I, and the middle Quantity of the Orifices of the Veffels appropriated to the groffer, is to those of the thinner.

thinner, as 9 to 4, that the Quantity of the thinner Fluid will be double that of the groffer fecreted in the fame Space of Time: Which is agreeable to Sanctorius's Experiments. If now, without altering the Proportion of the Numbers, we suppose the middle Diameter of the Secretories of the groffer, to be to the middle Diameter of the Secretories of the thinner, as 100 to 99, the Proportion of the groffer Secretion to the thinner will be the fame, as I to 4. And this feems to be the Cafe of those who waste with too much Sweat, which arifes from the Encrease of the Amplitude of the Vessels appropriated to the Secretion of the thinner Fluids. But if, the Proportion of the Numbers being still the fame, it happens from any Caufe that the Diameter of the Secretories of the groffer, is to the Diameter of the Secretories of the thinner, as 5 to 2, then the Quantity of the groffer Secretion will be about a third Part larger than the thinner; which is the Cafe of those who are afflicted with a Diarrhaa, a Diabetes, or a Salivation, from the Encrease of the Amplitude of the Veffels arifing from the conglomerate Glands. From whence we fhall have no Occasion to wonder why, upon the Encrease of one Evacuation, another is fometimes diminished.

21. But I had rather enquire what Advantages the Students in Physic may obtain from this

this Differtation. First then, they will have no Occafion to apply themfelves to that naufeous Doctrine of Ferments appropriated to every Part; which Hypothesis made the Art of Phyfic, in its own Nature obscure, an unattainable Intricacy. Again, we shall have no farther Necessity for inventing of Figures, and entertaining our Reafon with idle Fictions; and we shall be enabled to judge more eafily what fort of Medicines ought to be applied to the Diforders in Secretion, as foon as we understand that the fuccessful Powers of Medicines depend upon fewer Properties than they have been hitherto imagined to depend; especially fince, in the next Place, we have here shewn, that those Diseases, for which these Remedies are fought after, arise from the fewest and most simple Causes. Nor will it be nothing to a generous Spirit, willing to improve an Art that requires fo much Time, to be condemned no more to fo many eternal Compilers and impertinent Triflers, who by not understanding the Circulation, have too long and too unhappily prevented the nobleft of all Inventions from anfwering the Hopes and Wilhes of Mankind. I will conclude this Differtation with this Suggestion, that from these Principles any one may eafily attain to a Method of explaining the Symptoms and Uses of many of the Vifcera, which are not as yet fully understood, and folve many Problems which escaped the In-

65

Industry and Curiofity of fo many of their Predeceffors.

COROLLARY.

From the Principles here laid down, it follows, that the inspired Air is not mixed with the Blood in the Lungs, for the Service of Respiration.



A DISSERTATION

Of the Caufes of the different Quantity that the Blood flows with thro' the Lungs of living Creatures, and Embrio's.

HE Solution of a Problem ought ne-ver to be attempted by many Postulata, and the Affiftance of dubious Theorems, which may be eafily proved by a few Poftulata, and the Affiftance of a felf-evident Theorem: Neither ought any Thing to be supposed to be transacted by the Passage of Bodies unknown in Nature, and unallowed in Difpute, thro' Pores unknown and unallowed: In the last Place, no Power or Faculty of Bodies, the Existence of which may be

be reasonably disputed, and many do difpute, ought to be made use of, when there is a Power nearer, and of a Force equal to the Work required, or a Quality fo confpicuous, that no Body can doubt of, but is univerfally confessed, and allowed. Upon this Account I am difpleafed with their Reafoning, who, in order to explain the extraordinary Powers of Mercury beyond the Force. of most other Bodies, when it is conveyed into the Veffels of Animals to expel fome Fluids not eafily put in Motion, do not fcruple to recur to a certain Power of Salt extracted from the Ashes of Plants, a fort of Rival to Nature, which they imagine to be in Mercury, and endowed with Force enough to work out the Salts and Acid Fluids, and carry them off with it felf thro' the Vessels of the Body. For these Persons take for granted two Politions very uncertain, if not evidently false, that all Diseases, for the Cure of which Mercury is made ufe of, arife from a Redundance of Acids, and that Mercury is of the fame Nature as Lixivial Salts. They too philosophife much after the fame Manner, who in order to fhew why the Wood of Guiacum is more powerful than other Woods (which Phyficians ufe in Difeases of the same Kind) attribute to Guiacum the Nature of Salts, which they call, from their Levity, Volatile Salts, becaufe, befides other Uncertainties, they take

take it for granted that the Action of Stomach and Viscera in Animals changes all they receive into the fame Forms, as we express from them by the Affiftance of a ftrong Chymical Fire; which, as we shall prove in another Differtation, is too large and unreasonable a Postulatum. Now I, to prevent being forced to use either too large or too many *Postulatas*, and uncertain or perhaps false Theorems, only observe that the Gravity of Mercury exceeds that of other Minerals, which Phyficians apply for the fame Purpofes; and by confequence, it having a proportionable Celerity, (which is every where equal to the Celerity of the Blood,) is susceptible of a greater Quantity of Motion, and exerts a greater Force ; and there is no other Quality wanting here, which any one will allow to be in Mercury, and other Medicines applicable to the fame Uses. But I believe it very uncertain, whether Mercury be of the fame Nature as com-mon Salt of Tartar, unlefs it can be first proved that Gold is of Nature allied to Acids, and many other Matters yet obscure, be first explained : For as for Guiacum, that Acid Liquor which it affords in a Chymical Distillation, as it shews the Gravity of the Wood, so it betrays a Quality in the Opinion of some, opposite to Acids.

From whence it follows, that the common Mercury cleanfed from all lighter at-F 2 tendant

tendant Bodies, is, *cæteris paribus*, a more efficacious Remedy, than when it is prepared and join'd with Salts, and fuch Kind of Substances: And that the Force of Gold reduced into a Liquid, or any Form commiscible with the Blood, is proportionable to its Weight, and that fuch a Preparation of Gold would as far exceed all other Remedies in its Virtues, as it should exceed them in its Weight.

2. Now they who undertook the difficult Task of explaining Refpiration, ought to have taken Notice of these Observations: For the Mistake of Physicians lay folely in this Point, fince they run to philosophising upon the assumed a Number of less known Qualities for the Explication of that which is performed by one fingle generally known Faculty of a Body generally known. But to make this plain, it is necessary to enumerate some of the most simple Symptoms, and common Phænomenas of Respiration.

1. It is a Phænomenon, that the Lungs of an Animal, v. g. of a live Dog, upon opening the Thorax, immediately grow flaccid, and fall together, and the Circulation of the Blood, and the Motion of the Heart foon cease; which does not happen in other Creatures, all whose Blood does not pass thro' the Lungs.

2. That a Dog, stopping his Mouth and Nose according to Art, so that the inspired Air

Air cannot be emitted, immediately dies; which Cafe is not the same in other Animals.

3. That a Dog shut into a Place full of Air, but closed according to Art, immediately dies, which does not happen to other Animals in the same Case.

4. That the Human Foetus lives in the Womb without the Affistance of the Air convey'd thro' the Trachea into the Lungs, and respired.

5. That a Human Foetus, when born, and wrapp'd up in its Membranes entire, lives in the Water without Danger of Suffocation, and yet when taken out of the Secundines, after it has once received the inspired Air, it cannot survive without the Continuance of that Inspiration.

6. That the Blood being drawn out by Transfusion from a Dog of a free Respiration, or a Puppy at its first Respiration, into another whose Mouth and Nostrils are closed, (and, if that seem necessary, as great a Quantity being taken from the one, as it has received from the other) the Dog, or Puppy, whose Mouth and Nostrils are closed, immediately dies. The same happens upon the Immission of Milk.

7. That a Dog enclosed, in the Pump of Guerikius's Invention, or commonly called Boyle's, the Air being extracted, immediately dies, but a Puppy lives much longer, and so do other Animals, who have a lesser Quantity of Blood passing thro' their Lungs.

F 3

8. That

8. That the Air, in which the enclosed Dog dies, is a little before the Death of the Animal of the same Gravity and Elasticity as it was when the Animal was first enclosed.

3. These are the principal Phænomenas of that Respiration which respects Mankind; and because all of them difcover a Sort of neceffary Relation between the Circulation of the Blood, (in which the Life of Man confifts,) and the Power and Nature of the Air, therefore we ought first to determine what we mean by the Word Air. It is evident, in my Opinion, that we ought in this place to take for the Air a fluid Body, capable of forcing it felf thro' the Trachea, and the smallest Branches of the Trachea into the extrement Parts of the Lungs, but not capable of penetrating the Pores of the Coats that cover the Lungs, no more then it can those of Glass. And because the same Fluid which we infpire upon the opening of our Mouths, is not known to us by any Quality, fo much as its Gravity and Elafficity, it is fufficient to call the Air here an elaftic Fluid, whose Density is proportionable to its Compression, since we know of no other Fluid befide the Air, which can be comprefled into Spaces reciprocally proportional to its compreffing Powers.

4 Now we must give the State of the Question. But neither ought it, nor can it

be

be stated in other Words than Dr. Harvey's, who in his Treatife of the Birth, in his Book of the Generation of Animals, proposes to the Enquiry of the Learned:

" How an Embryo can live in the Womb " of the Mother, without the Infpiration of " the Air thro' the Trachea, as I shall foon " fhew it does; and yet the fame, when ex-" cluded, immediately refpires, and cannot " furvive fo much as an Hour without Re-" fpiration: But if continuing in the Womb " beyond nine Months, it can live and be " well without the Benefit of Respiration ? " Or how it comes to pass, that a Fætus " born, and covered in its Membrances en-" tire, and still enclosed in its own Water, " can live without Danger of Suffocation for " fome Hours ; yet the fame Fætus, when " out of the Secundines, if it once draws in " the Air thro' the Lungs, cannot furvive " without it fo much as one Minute, but " immediately dies. In the fame Manner, " when a Fatus, in the Cafarean Operation " is taken out fome Hours after the Death of " the Mother, it is found alive, and fur-" vives within the Cover of the Secundines, " not requiring the Benefit of the Air. But 60 as foon as it has once enjoyed it, if it be 66 placed again in the fame Secundines, it is " fuffocated for the Want of the Air." So far he. And from hence I shall begin to explain what others before me have thought F4 more

71

more probable, and adapted to the Solution of this Queftion, and by what Reafons they have confirmed their Opinions, and how often they have deviated from the Rule I laid down at the Beginning.

5. Whoever confiders the Phænomena which we mentioned, will readily own the Errors of Alphon fus Borellius, (but the Error of how extraordinary a Person!) in the 113th Proposition, and the following Part of his fecond Book, of the Motion of Animals, when he declares that he has proved that the Particles of the Air are mixed with the Blood by the Force of Respiration. For, fays he, because there is a watry ferous Juice always found in the Blood, and fuch a watry Serum being put into Motion by the Preffure of the inspired Air, turns to a Froth, which Froth is therefore impregnated with aerial Particles; and the fame Water is capable of an easy Penetration thro' the Pores of the Veins: It is impossible but that it must carry with it fome entangled Particles of Air, and mix them with the Blood: But fince the Particles of Air mixed with the Blood are elastic, and are never preffed with the fame Force for the Space of two Minutes together, therefore they will always free and reftore themfelves from their Compression, and by that Means propagate an Ofcillatory Motion, (in which the Life of Animals, according to Borellius, confifts,) which is uncertain, and fubject

73

fubject to change every Minute. But it is plain from our former Obfervations, that this Opinion is vain and groundlefs: For this gives no Solution of Dr. Harvey's Problem. Any one may ftill quere, in Dr. Harvey's Place, how it is then possible to happen, that the Fatus when born, and covered in its Membranes entire, furvives for fome Hours without Danger of Suffocation, and yet the fame Fatus, upon the Removal of the Secundines, if it once draws the Air into the Lungs, cannot fubfift without it afterwards the Space of a Moment, but immediately dies.

For if it is neceffary for the Support of Life, that fome Part of the Air should be mixed with the Blood in its Courfe thro' the Lungs, the fame Neceffity requires that it fhould be mixed with the Blood of the $F\alpha$ tus, while it lies within the Secundines feparated from the Womb: But the Fætus maintains Life within them without Refpiration, and the Affiftance of the grofs and common Air, and yet when that very Air, upon the Removal of the Secundines immediately after the Birth, rushes into the Lungs, it cannot afterwards subsist without it. Again, any one who confiders our first Phænomenon, will plainly difcover, either that no Part of the Air enters the Veffels of the Lungs, or that it is of no Moment, and contributes nothing to the Action of Respiration,

tion. Because in Frogs, the Sea-Tortoife, and Animals of that Kind, and in Human Fætus, or any fimilar to it, when involved in the Secundines entire after the Birth, far the greatest Quantity of the Blood flows thro' the Heart, without approaching the Lungs, and requires no Affiftance at all from the Air: And this is the Reason why those Animals continue alive fo long a Time after opening the Thorax. But in Cafes where all the Blood is carried thro' the Lungs (as in a Man after free Respiration) those Animals die immediately upon opening the Thorax, because upon the sudden Irruption of the Weight of the Air not paffing thro', but compressing the Vessels of the Lungs, it is not the fine and more fubtle Part, but the groffer Air which is excluded from the Veficles of the Lungs, that Part of the groffer Air, I mean, whole Office it is to fill and diftend the Pulmonary Veffels.

Again, if the Mixtures of any Part of the Air with the Blood in the Lungs is of Use or Advantage in Respiration, we may reasonably enquire of *Borellius*, how it comes to pass, that a *Puppy*, (whose first and private Passages for the Blood are not yet closed) should live longer in the Air-Pump, the Air being extracted, than a Dog, tho' of a much greater Strength? For if the Air, or a Mixture of Part of the Air with the Blood, is of any Use, there is an equal Danger of Death in both Cases.

6. But

6. But Borellius's Opinion is more evidently refuted, by the Help of the fecond and third Phænomenon, and again by the fixth and eighth: For if an Oscillatory Motion in the Blood produced by a Mixture of Part of the Air, is neceffary and fufficient for the Prefervation of Life, the Animal, whofe Mouth and Noftrils are closed, but whose Lungs are inflated with Air, must have that Motion, and fo must the Animal enclosed in a Place full of Air, but not open. For the elaftic Air cannot be wanting in this Cafe; and, if we believe Borellius, neither Respiration nor Life can be wanting, as long as any Part of elastic Air remains: But it is plain from the Phænomena, that the Air does remain, and that of the fame Gravity as when the Animal was first enclosed. But if the fixth Phænomenon is confidered, it will appear, that this Oscillatory Motion, impressed jupon the Blood by the Mixture of the Air, is neither necessary nor fufficient for the Uses of Life. Becaufe the Air will not be more eafily conveyed to the Fætus by the Affiftance of the maternal Blood, than it will by the Affiftance of the Transfusion we mentioned, from the refpiring Dog to the Dog not refpiring, which however will not live longer than if he had received no Blood mixed with Air: So very uncertain and fugitive is that Life which is expected from a Mixture of Air with the Blood.

7. There

75

7. There is no Neceffity for examining the Notion of Wolfgangus Wedelins, who lays down in the 127th, and the following Pages of his Physiologia Reformata, that the Life of Animals depends upon a Sort of Reciprocation of a certain innate and vital Air, with the external Air mixing and communicating with the internal Mais of the Blood: By which Words it appears that he defigned to adopt the Notion of Borellius, and fubstitute the Term Reciprocation in the Place of his Oscillatory Motion; but he has increased the Number of uncertain Notions upon which Borellius's Hypothefis depends, by bringing in upon it a certain vital Air; and fo applying two Sorts of Air for the Performance of that Business which Borellius managed by one known Kind of Air. Let it fuffice to remark, that this Reciprocation is proved useless and repugnant to the Nature of Things from the fame Reasons, as Borellius's Oscillatory Motion, and Mixture of the Air with the Blood in the Lungs, was before; and fo we have overthrown the very Caufe and Foundation both of the Oscillatory Motion, and Wedelius's Reciprocation.

Neither is there any more Neceffity for entring into a prolix Discussion of Bohnius's Opinion in the 78th Page of his Anatomico Physiological Circle, where he fays that only a Part of the Air is conveyed into the Blood in Respiration, but that it is the most subtle Part,

Part, and yet not elastic, tho' he allows it the very Cause of the Elasticity of theAir, upon Account of its perpetual Motion, which is peculiar to a spherical Figure. For Bobnius readily allows the subtle Air to be of a spherical Figure, and to enjoy the perpetual Motion of a spherical Figure, by which our Vitality, as he loves to express himself, proceeding from the Motion of the Blood ascribable to that Part of the Air, is kept up and preferved. This is Borellius's Hypothes, and therefore no wonder it answers Dr. Harvey's Problem, and agrees with the Phænomena no better than that does.

8. But we must now examine their Opinions, who think it evident from many Arguments, that fome Part at least of the Air is received into the Vessels of the Lungs for the Use of Respiration; which however we have already shewn, and shall farther shew, in the Profecution of this Subject, to be false and groundles.

Let us then begin with that Argument, which is drawn from an Obfervation of Dr. Lower's. He obferved that the Blood was fent into the Pulmonary Artery of a black Colour, but that it came out of the Pulmonary Vein florid and ruddy: Again, upon the Clofure of the Trachea, that the Blood flowed black from an Aperture of the Cervical Artery. In the last Place, that in a dead Animal, if the Blood in the Vena Cava

con-

continuing still in a State of Fluidity, were forced thro' the Heart and the Lungs dilated at the fame Time by the Bellows, it would fpout from the Lungs of as ruddy a Complexion, as it did when the Animal was living. But he has not proved, which he ought to have done, that this Change of Colour could proceed from no other Caufe, but a Mixture of the Air: For notwithstanding this Observation, it may proceed from the alternate Compression of the Vessels of the Lungs; and fo the Solution of the Parts of the paffing Fluid may be produced by the Irruption of the elastic heavy Air, and not by its Mixture with the Blood. And Dr. Lower's Observation equally proves that there was no fuch Preffure, as it does that there was no fuch Mixture. And every one will readily allow, that as much Air was mixed with that Part of the Blood, which comes out upon the first Aperture of the Vein, and at last settles of a black Colour at the Bottom of the Veffel, while it is falling thro' the Air, as can be mixed with the Blood in that fhort Paffage thro' the Lungs: But on the other Side, that the Agitation and Solution of the Parts of the Blood is much greater within the Vessels of the Lungs, than in the Bottom of a Veffel at Reft. Laftly, to oppose one Observation to another, let the Patrons of this Opinion shew how it comes to pass, that the Blood which we

we perceive of a red and florid Colour in the Time of Emiffion, being foon after expofed to the Air, often lofes that Rednefs? And whether or no this Obfervation does not prove the Rednefs of that Blood entirely owing to the Preflure of the Lungs and the Heart? For it is not a Deficiency of the Air in this Cafe, but of Motion, and the Solution of the Parts imprefled by the Heart and Lungs. But more of this at the End of this Differtation. However, read upon this Subject the very Learned Dr. Lifter's first Anatomical Differtation on Shell-Fifb, p. 101.

Let the fecond Argument be that which is drawn from the Miasma's and Effluvia's which kill fuddenly by being drawn with the Air into the Lungs, and fo are mixed with the Blood in the Lungs, which could not poffibly be, unlefs their Vehicle, the Air, was carried into the Blood-Veffels of the Lungs. But it ought to have been proved, that the Powers of these Miasma's cannot stop Respiration, unless they are mixed with the Blood ; for I fee no Proof of that, nor any Reafon why their Mixture with the Blood should occasion Death. Now we know that these Miasma's are joined with a greater or a leffer Gravity of the Air, which produces a greater or leffer Inflation of the Lungs than in their natural State; and from that alone this Defect of Respiration proceeds.

The

The third Argument is taken from an Experiment of Dr. Mayo's, fhewing that the Blood, when it has been emitted for fome Time, and freed from the Air in the Air-Pump, does not expand it felf fo much, as the freth drawn Arterial Blood does in the fame Engine, and by Confequence does not contain fo much Air. But nothing certain can be concluded from this Experiment, unlefs it be first proved, that the following Proposition is false.

Upon the exposing of two equal Portions of the same Fluid, both abounding with an equal Weight of Air mixed in their smallest Spaces, a greater Quantity of Air may be extracted in the same Time from that Portion of the Fluid, which is divided into smaller Parts, than from that which is not so much divided, provided the same Force be applied to both.

The Truth of which Proposition is felfevident; for it is plain, that a Fluid of a clofer Texture, *cæteris paribus*, cannot fo foon, or with the fame Force, be compelled to difcharge the Air included, as one of a loofer Texture; and we fhall prove hereafter, that the Arterial Blood is of a loofer, and the Veinous Blood of a clofer Texture.

This laft Argument depends upon the Authority of Sylvius and Thurston, who affirm, that

that Air and a black Sort of Fluid was impelled thro' the Trachea into the Blood-Vessels of the Lungs. I shall reply to this from an Observation of Malphigius's, who disputing of these Kinds of Argument in his first Epistle de Pulmonibus, concludes thus: From whence, as there is no natural Passage from all these Vessels, because the immitted Liquor makes more Paffages for it Self, than are usual in a State of Health, so we are convinced, that those direct and glorious Roads are broken upon any flight Impulse and Alteration of the Humours. And indeed, it is evident to any one who tries this Experiment with Care, that it is impossible but the Veficles, and those Vessels of the Lungs, whose Texture is fo delicate, must be burst by the Force, with which the Air, and that black Sort of Fluid, is immitted into them.

These are all the Reasons, and all of one Stamp, which are equally favourable to Dr. Mayo's Hypothesis, as to Borellius's and Etmuller's.

9. Becaufe he, agreeable to Willis and many others, determines, that the Air fupplies the Blood in the Lungs with Nitroaerial Particles, as he expresses himself, which Particles meeting with others of a Salino-fulphureous Nature supplied from the Blood, excite that Effervesence upon which Muscular Contraction depends, and which by confequence make a great Part of the Animal Spirits. G From

From hence he concludes that Animals die upon the Suppression of Respiration, for this Reason, because of the Want of that Salt of the Air, the Motion of the Heart flags, and then the Flow of Blood to the Brain is interrupted, and of Course the Distribution of the Animal Spirits, wherein the Foundation of Life is placed, ceases. But I shall not infift any longer in the Resultation of these, but only observe, that the Opinions which we have enumerated, which seemed new to the Authors themselves and others, ought to be accounted one and the same Hypothesis expressed in different Terms; fo that whoever results one, results them all.

10. For it amounts to the fame Thing, whether we affirm with Etmuller, that Part of the Air is mixed with the Blood in the Lungs for the Service of Respiration; or with Borellius, for the Prefervation of the Oscillatory Motion; or with Wedelius, for the Continuance of the Reciprocation of two different Kinds of Air; or with Bohnius, for the Supply of the Blood with fpherical Particles; or with Mayo, with nitrous Particles of Air; both which according to thefe Authors, are the Caufes of its Elastic Quality, which indeed it has not: Because all these Opinions determine, that fome Part of the Air is neceffarily conveyed into the Blood by the Affistance of Respiration. But the Reafons drawn from the Phanomena are general, and

and prove that no Part of the Air, under any Denomination, enters the Veffels of the Lungs for the Service of Refpiration: For not one of these can ever, from their particular Opinion, explain how it happens, that the Fætus lives without Respiration in the Womb, but that the Animal out of the Womb die without Respiration, altho' it is supplied with Blood from a respiring Animal, which Blood is impregnated with a Part of Air either elastic, or perspirable, or reciprocrative, or spherical, or nitrous, See the 6th Phænomenon.

But these Great Men, offended against the Rule laid down at the Beginning of this Differtation, because they had Recourse, without Reason, to Properties of the Air not sufficiently understood, much less demonstrated, when the Gravity and Elasticity of the Air feemed so plain and obvious to all, which they should rather have examined into, and adapted to the Business, than have entangled themselves with inextricable Difficulties.

11. We muft now repeat our former Obfervation, that the Air, in which the included Animal dies, has neither loft its Gravity nor Elafticity; and therefore, that all the Air which was there at firft, remains there ftill, and by confequence from a known Property of the Air, that no Air, or Nitroaerial Particles, are drawn by Refpiration into the Blood-Veffels of the Lungs.

G 2

Befide,

83

Beside, it is evident from the first Phanomenon, that the Air, or whatever Body it is, which is to be drawn into the Lungs for the Confervation of Life. cannot penetrate the Coat of the Lungs; otherwife an Animal might furvive a long Time after the opening of the Thorax, neither would the Lungs fall together; and when the Thorax was shut, the Air, by running from the Branches of the Trachea, and the neighbouring Veffels, into the Cavity of the Thorax, would continually obstruct the Inflation of the Lungs, and Respiration of it felf, fince the Air is a Fluid, which preffes every Way. Again, it is evident that the Air, which could break the Sides of the Veffels in the Lungs, would break the Sides of the Veficles too, and the Coat of the Lungs in which they are involved, and which torms a fort of Network there: But upon this Supposition there could be no Inflation of the Veficles, and no Refpiration performed. But that no one may imagine, that the Blood is conveyed into the Veffels of the Lungs, to receive the Air there, let us remember, that we endeavoured to prove in another Place, that the Ducts of the Arteries and Veins were continued Pipes; and indeed were they not continued in the Lungs, we should always eject Blood with the Air. But perhaps it may be of fome Use to the Confirmation of this Truth, fince others disbelieve it, because they

they have not seen it, to quote Malphigius, where, in his Second Epistle de Pulmonibus, he fays, that the Blood (as is plain to Senfe it felf) runs through Vessels of a winding Nature, and is not difperfed into an open Areas, but is ever forced along through Pipes and Conduits.

12. But not to be fo tedious in the Demonstration of so easy a Matter, let the fixth Phænomenon be sufficient: For if any Kind of Mixture of the Air with the Blood is fufficient for the Prefervation of Life, then the Blood drawn from a refpiring Animal, or Milk immitted into any Veffel where a nonrespiring Animal lies, would give and preferve Life to that Animal, after the fame Manner as the maternal Blood does to the Fætus, fince Milk bears an equal Portion of Air, endued with an equal or a greater Gravity, and fo the Animal would not die; which contradicts the fixth Phænomenon.

But the particular Proof that the Air does not enter the Pulmonary Veffels, depends upon the fecond and third Phænomena; where it appears that there is Air enough to enter the Veffels, if there was any Poffibility that it should enter. And that it does not enter, is plain from the eighth, fince after the Death of the Animal, whole Noftrils are not clofed, the Air is found in the Veffel in which it was included with the Animal of the fame Gravity, as when it was at first inspired, and

G 3
and included. The Caufe of which Phænomenon we shall take this Opportunity of explaining. We observe, that the Air does not enter through the Pores of the Pleura of the nervous Circle of the Diaphragm, because it finds a more eafy Paffage through the Mouth, and the wide Duct of the Trachea, where it meets with a lefs Refiftance. After the fame Manner the Air admitted into the Lungs, finds a more open and lefs obstructing Passage through the Mouths of the Veffels leading to the Trachea, than it does through the Sides of those Vessels which are adapted for the Maintenance of a watry Fluid, of a thin Texture, and warm Nature, and fo is drove by a lefs Force toward the Jaws than into the Veins, that is, the fame Force which is fufficient to drive the Air towards the Jaws and Mouth, is not sufficient to drive it into the Pores of the Veins, which are neither fo open as the Jaws, nor fill'd with a Fluid which is capable of making fo little Refiftance. And the Force of this Reafoning depends upon this, That the Air is an Elastic Fluid, expandible to all Parts, and therefore will be fooner, or eafier drove thro? larger Paffages; and where there is a lefs Force of an expanding Heat, than it will thro' much finaller Paffages ; where there is a much greater Heat, which makes the Compass of the aerial Parts too great, and encreases the Diameter. And this is so evident,

dent, that after the Air is once admitted through the *Trachea* into the Lungs, and partly by its Weight, partly by its Elafticity drove into the Veficles, it can never afterwards be returned entire; but it will leave fome Part in the Veficles of the Lungs, effecially in the extremeft, which can never be imbibed by the contiguous Veffels; and the Lungs themfelves, which are ever afterwards more inflated and lighter than they were in the *Fætus*, plainly demonstrate that there is not room for the minuteft Particles of Air to efcape into the Blood-Veffels of the Lungs.

13. It now remains that we explain what Alteration that is which is made upon the Defcent of the Air into the Lungs, which is necessary to Creatures after their Birth, and the first Act of Respiration, and yet is accounted unknown and useless to the Fætus. In a Fætus almost all the Blood circulates from the Vena Cava, and pulmonary Artery, into the pulmonary Vein, and the Arteria Magna, without any Regard to the Lungs themfelves: For the Lungs uninflated, admit of but a fmall Quantity of Blood, becaufe, fince the Veficles of the Lungs upon an Inflation become fpherical, when that Inflation ceases, they will change to Spheroides, and being of an oblong Figure, grow flaccid of Course: But at that Time these Veficles may and ought to be touched by all the contiguous Veficles round them, and the Blood-G 4

Blood-Veffels in which they are involved, will be compressed and closed. Beside, the Branches of the Trachea are placed at Right: Angles with the lower Trachea, and at obtule ones with the upper; from whence it happens, that these Branches, (when there is no Inflation,) and the Veffels annexed to them, will forcibly compress the lower and interior Branches and Veficles; and fcarce any Circulation at all can be performed thro? the Lungs uninflated. Wherefore fince the Veficles in this State of Compression make a greater Resistance to the Blood, that pours from the Left Ventricle of the Heart, than that open and uncompressed Passage, which leads from the Rife of the Pulmonary Artery to the Rife of the Aortal Artery; it is neceffary that almost all that Blood, which passes by the Orifice of the veinous Anastomosis, should enter into the other, or the Arterial Anastomosis, which will easily admit of it. But although, by its being proved, that very little Blood paffes thro' the Lungs in a Fætus, it follows too that the Fætus does not refpire by an alternate Draught and Return of the Air through the Trachea. Yet this Truth will appear more plain, when we confider some other Phænomena's: For the Air does not penetrate the Secundines; and although fome Air was originally included in them, yet Respiration could not be maintained by that, as is manifest from the Experiment

periment of an Animal included in a Veffel impervious to the Air.

14. The Lungs then of a Fætus continue uninflated merely from a Defect of Air, that is, fuch Air as living Creatures draw in with Freedom: For, fince the Lungs do not adhere to all the Ribs, and where they do adhere, the Lobes may perhaps be diftended, but the smaller Lobes and Veficles will not dilate, although the Breaft of the Fætus encreases, unless there be a fufficient Fluid to make that Dilatation, and of which there must be a constant and fresh Succession, as the Nature of Respiration, explain'd by these Phanomena's, requires. But neither of these can be obtained in the Womb: But as foon as the Animal is produced, and has drawn in the Air, the Lungs and its Veficles are immediately dilated; and then, as a certain neceffary Confequence, which we shall foon explain, the Circulation through the Paffages proper to the Fætus ceases, and the whole Courfe of the Blood is turned into another Road. Nor could the Clofure of those private Paffages be prevented, if the Fætus in the Womb had received the Air into the Lungs, as we shall foon prove. The Air then, immediately after the Birth, being driven by its Weight and elastic Force, rushes into the Mouth, and the Aspera Arteria, as into Places where it finds the leaft Refiftance; and then at laft the Breaft is capable

pable of being dilated, and elevated, after the Air by its Paflage thro' the *Trachea*, has begun to fupport it; and being preffed by the Force of the circumambient Air, propels outwards with an equal Force.

15. The Air, I affirm, will rush in by the Force of its Elasticity and Gravity, not by any prior Dilatation of the Breaft : But upon the Reception of the Air into the Trachea of an equal Force to the external Air, the thorax will not only be capable of, but will exert an immediate Dilatation; fince That is moved by a Muscle which has no Antagonist, as the next Paragraph shall explain. But the received Air being heavy and elaftic, will prefs equally on the Sides, as well as to the Bottom, and by confequence will necessarily break into the lateral Branches of the Trachea; and because they are fituated at acute Angles with the lower Trunk, and at obtuse ones with the upper, therefore if the entring Air is of a sufficient Force to inflate the Branches and Veficles, it is imposfible but that upon the Increase of their Breadth, their Length must at the fame Time be diminished, that is, it is impossible but that the Branches of the Trachea must be protruded upwards and outwards, and fo forced to make Angles lefs acute with Refpect to the inferior Trunk. Belide, if the entring Air can diftend these Branches and the contiguous Vesicles by its elastic Force, it will prefs

prefs the Branches of the Trachea too on all Sides from the internal Superficies: And because there is a greater Refistance towards the Trunk, and the Middle of the Thorax, which are thereforeParts of a leffer Angle, (fince there all the Branches and Veficles, both the inner and lower, from the fame Side of the Mediastinum, and all the inward and outward of the oppofite Side, make a Refiftance;) but there is a leffer Resistance towards the Ribs, which already give Way, and the exterior Branches and Veficles, none of which, befide those of the fame Side, can make any Refiftance, and which (I fpeak of the Exteriors) are extruded by all the middle ones on each Side; therefore while the Branches and Veficles are filled with Air, they are thrust out together towards the Parts of the greater Angle, from whence the Cavity of the Breaft will increase and fwell the Branches of the Trachea being separated and giving Room for the Inflation of the Weficles of the Lungs.

16. Upon an Inflation of the Veficles of the Lungs, the whole Mafs of Blood m. eafily circulate through the Veffels, which ard interwove and difperfed between them. For fince upon an Inflation they become fpherical, they cannot be preffed in this State of Inflation by any neighbouring Vessels equally inflated, excepting in a few and very minute Parts: Wherefore almost all the Veffels

fels will have no Pressure, and the Blood will run more eafily and in a greater Quantity from the Right Ventricle of the Heart into that Part of the Pulmonary Artery, which being extended beyond the oblique and less capacious Rife of the Arterial Paffage, leads directly into the Lungs, fince there is a lefs Refiftance there, because the Weight of the flaccid Veficles is removed. and the other Veffels were before turned back upon themfelves. And therefore the Blood paffing more freely through the Lungs into the Pulmonary Vein, will eafily close up the veinous Anastomosis, by its continual working against the Valve, which lies opposite to the Blood that is to return into the Vena Cava; and that Valve being preffed with an equal Force on each Side, will foon grow immoveable, and deny any Paffage at: all to the Blood.

But the Air, when once infpired, muft always be expired and infpired by Turns thro' the whole Courfe of Life; which arifes from a Neceffity eafily to be accounted for. For fince the *Thorax* is furnished with attolent and dilating Muscles, which are of fo great a Force in Respect of their *Antagonists*, that they may be accounted as none; therefore the Muscle, or Series of Muscles, that dilate the *Thorax*, may be faid to want an *Antagonist* Muscle. Wherefore, as foon as the *Ribs*; which fall together both by their

their Weight and Structure, have re-expelled the Air out of the *Thorax*, the Mufcles that dilate the *Thorax* will be immediately contracted; fince the Animal Spirits, which then effectually endeavour at a Contraction, flow alternately into Mufcles that have no *Antagonifts*; which alternate Fluxion they exert into all the Mufcles upon Account of the alternate Preffure of the Brain, arifing from the Dilatation of the Arteries which beat there: But this is without any Effect, where there are equal oppofite Mufcles, and of an equal Contraction, from the fame Caufes.

17. While the infpirated Air inflates the Lungs, and allows the whole Mafs of Blood an easy Passage to them, if it becomes altered from any Caufe, (either from the Encrease of its natural Gravity, or of its Elafticity, or from the accidental Accession of a greater Weight of fome Bodies, which it is a Vehicle to) fo as to diftend the Veficles of the Lungs too much, that is, to fuch a Degree, that the Blood-Veffels interwoven with the Coats of the Veficles, are much straighten'd and compressed; then the Veffels will be clofed up, and the Courfe of the Blood through the Lungs will be obstructed. Wherefore the Infpiration is the Caufe of the Dilatation of the Breaft and Explication of the Lungs, as it is of the free Circulation of the Blood, while it pours from the right Ventricle

tricle of the Heart into the Lungs. But upon a Redepression of the Ribs by the Force of their own Weight, and, as the Great Bellina expresses it, by the Affistance of their Figure, Polition, and Articulation, the Velicles of the Lungs are neceffarily compressed, and forced inwards upon themfelves, and the Branches of the Trachea are impelled at Right Angles: In the mean Time the Air included in the Veficles is expelled towards the Paffages of the Trachea, and the Jaws. But fince the Air is an elastic Body, it cannot be expelled without preffing upon all the adjoining Parts; which is the Reafon that the Blood, in its Passage thro' the Coats of the Veficles, is more forcibly driven to the Left Ventricle of the Heart. And becaufe this Blood paffes thro' an infinite Series of Veficles, which are compressed by the Fall of the Ribs between innumerable small Bodies, and is drove by the Force of the Air in the minutest Vessels, therefore every Particle of the last-formed Blood is fo broken and comminuted, fo feparated from each other, or reduced to fo fmall a Degree of Cohefion, that it is eafy for any one Particle to pass off into some secretory Vessel answerable to its Bulk, wherefoever it finds a lefs Refistance than it does within the Blood-Veffel which conveys it. From whence it appears, that during a regular Respiration no Animal has any Occasion for a Ferment

to

to work its Secretions. But after the Air is ejected out of the Veficles, the Blood is no longer comminuted by its elaftic Force, and the concurrent Powers of the *Ribs* endeavouring to reftore themfelves; and all the remaining Part of Expiration is fpent in the Exclusion of the Air.

18. It is hardly worth while to explain at prefent, why Air of fuch a Levity as is infufficient to caufe a ready Inflation of the Veficles of the Lungs, and at the fame Time to recline the Branches of the Trachea at obtufe Angles, will not answer the Necessity of Inspiration: Nor why, in a close Vessel full of Air, where there is only a leffer Expansion from the Heat, (for where the Heat is great, and the Place open, Respiration is obstructed for almost the fame Reason as it is in Vacuo, as we shall soon prove,) yet the Elasticity of the Air, and the Inflation of the Branches and Veficles of the Trachea, is neceffarily encreafed, as is observable upon the opening of Animals which die in that Condition; and thus Respiration is stopped together with the Circulation ; beside, that the Air is then made more denfe and heavy, becaufe it is extraordinarily impregnated with the Particles perfpiring from the Lungs and the Skin. Nor need we enquire why Animals die immediately in Vacuo, upon the Failure of Refpiration, fince there is no Air to inflate the Lungs ; tho' younger and newborn

born Creatures die flower in this Cafe than the adult, becaufe the private Paffages of the Blood are not entirely clofed up in the Younger; as from the fame Reafon, upon the opening of the *Thorax* in both, amphibious Animals, that is, thofe, all whofe Blood does not pafs thro' the Lungs, do not die fo foon from the Defect of Refpiration, as thofe whofe whole Quantity of Blood does pafs thro' the Lungs.

I had rather now explain the Reafon, why a Puppy, tho' its private Paffages are still open, if it once has admitted the infpired Air, and the Trachea be then immediately clofed, and remain fo, fhould yet die flower than a Dog. For upon the Clofure of the Trachea, from the fame Reason in both Cafes, a Portion of Air is included after Infpiration, which is expanded to fuch a Degree by the Power of the Heat, that now no Blood can pass thro' the Veffels of the Lungs, as being too much compressed by the Air. In this Cafe then, it is neceffary for the Prolongation of Life, that all the Blood should pass thro' those old private Passages, which it cannot now, nor indeed ever did before: wherefore there is Neceffity for the Death of the Animal in both Cafes; but the Puppy will die more flowly, becaufe the private Paffages, which allow Room for fome little Circulation, still remain open. But if the Portion of the included and expanded Air be

be not fo great, as to lock up all the Paffages of the Blood into the Lungs, the Animal will still furvive the longer.

But if the Fætus, either within or without the Membranes, is manag'd fo, as to have no Power of respiring, yet still it will be longer in dying than an Adult, while both the old Paffages are open, and the Veficles of the Lungs uninflated with Air; nor will it die, but by the Defect of Nutriment, or the Force of the Cold, and then only as a Creature, whofe Nature can bear neither of those Extremes.

I shall take an Occasion to enquire, in this Place, what Power that is in Lightning, which fo fuddenly extinguishes Respiration: The Thorax of a Youth, who was killed by Lightning about two Years ago at Edinburgh, was opened in my Prefence, when I had an Opportunity of judging whether my Conjecture was right, which affirmed that the Lungs of the dead Person in this Case were flaccid, like those of Creatures that die in Vacuo in the Air-Pump of Guerikius or Boyle; and then we could find nothing extraordinary, or which feem'd to affect the Life, but that strange Collap fus of the Lungs: The Hair and Clothes, indeed, feem'd fing'd and burnt. Wherefore, the Air which furrounded the Perfon, being fuddenly, and to a great Degree expanded, could not inflate the Trenches of the Trachea, because its Gravity was

was leffened, nor could it enter the Veficles, becaufe the Expansion of its Parts was encreas'd. Nor did the *Phænomenon* of that fudden Death make me recur to framing new Properties of the Air, or calling in the Affistance of other Bodies unintelligible both to my felf and others.

19. It appears then, from what has been proved, that the Fætus can live in the Womb without Respiration, fince there are Paffages open, (although the inflated Lungs keep theirs strictly sealed,) by which the Blood can circulate from the Vena Cava into the Aorta, in which Circulation the animal Life subfifts. But the Infant, tho' born before the feventh Month, immediately refpires; nor can it fubfift any Time without Respiration, because, unless the Mouth and Noftrils are closed, the Air will rush by its own proper Force into the Breaft, which thro' the whole Course of Life afterwards must be alternately dilated and contracted; and then the Lungs are inflated, and the Blood flows freely thro' them, and clofes up the Veinous Anastomosis after the Manner we before described; and for the same Reason, as it flows with a greater Gravity into the left Ventricle, it necefiarily closes the Arterial Canal, which opposes it felf to the Blood which is flowing from thence into the Aorta. And therefore, after the Animal has once respired, and the anomalous Motion of the Blood

Blood ceafes, it cannot fubfift any Time without Respiration, because that then, at last, upon the Clofure of the Anastomosis, fo frequently mentioned, the Blood cannot circulate, unless Respiration be performed by the Inflation of the Lungs. But I would have it observ'd in this Place, that while the whole Mass of Blood did not pass thro' the Lungs in the Fætus, there was an evident Necessity for the Dispersion of a greater Quantity of it thro' the Viscera, and the Veffels interwoven beneath the Skin; wherefore they were all more full of Blood, and the Skin appeared of a more ruddy Complexion, and the Brains of the Fætus were larger; all which Anomalies ceafe by Degrees in born Creatures after Refpiration, by the Explication of the Lungs, and the large Increase of the vital Passages.

20. Before I go on to explain any farther Uses of the Lungs in born Animals, (for the Lungs are given for a future Service to the Fatus, if it once make its Way to Light,) it is neceffary for me to answer the Objections against the Hypothesis which we have advanced, which is, That Life consists in the Circulation of the Blood, produced by the Motion of the Heart and Arteries; and that therefore Respiration is necessary to born Animals, because without that the Circulation cannot be performed. For it is not only Pechlin's Opinion, that an intestine Motion

99

of the Blood, which many suppose a Property in Fluids equally compressed on all Sides, has a neceffary Connexion with the Life of Animals. Pechlin would have this Motion preferved by the Entrance of the Air into the minutest Passages of all the Parts : And altho' the Circulation of the Blood, and even of the animal Spirits, should cease in the mean Time, yet he imagines that Life would be still preferved, in the 3d Chapter of his Book de Aeris & Alimenta defectu. But every one knows, that when the Motion of a Fluid is once destroy'd, it can never be recovered or reftored by the Motion of the Parts of a Fluid, or by any other Parts breaking in equally on all Sides on that Fluid, with a Motion round their own Axis, (for this, or fomething like it, is what these Authors mean, as Pechlin expresses himself in the 1st Chapter and 18th Page of the same Book.) And therefore Pechlin endeavours, to no Purpofe, to prove that those Animals which feem dead to us in the Winter, and which we find afterwards to be really alive, have loft the circular Motion of the Blood from the Arteries of the Veins, which the Spring, by the Affiftance of the Intestine Motion, and the Application of a more kindly Air, reftores. The fame is as ineffectually attempted by others, by drawing Inftances from some Difeases, where Respiration and the Pulfe feem extinguished and destroyed, while the Life is still continued. 21.

. 4

21. Let this Observation suffice to answer both Instances : Suppose a Breast of a spheriodical Figure, let the lesser Diameter be fifteen Inches, and the greater twenty Inches. It is proved by others, that upon the Dilatation of the Breaft, the leffer Axis is increafed, and at the fame Time the greater not diminished, and therefore the Cavity and Amplitude of the Breast becomes larger. Suppose the Encrease of the Diameter reaching from the Spina Dorsi to the Sternum the tenth Part of an Inch, and the Increase of the Cavity of the Breast will be 31 cubical Inches, and the Breaft may and will receive fo much Air, being dilated to that Degree, as to have its leffer Diameter increas'd the tenth Part of an Inch. In the fame Manner, if the Increase of the leffer Diameter is the fifth Part of an Inch, the Breaft will receive 62 cubical Inches of Air : But if the Augment of the Diameter is the 50th Part of an Inch, the Augment of the Cavity of the Thorax will be fix Inches; and if the Augment were only the 100th Part of an Inch, the Increase of the Cavity would be three Inches, and fo much Air would be drawn in for the Explication of the Lungs; and therefore in that Cafe they would be a little expanded. From whence it appears, that fome Respiration may be performed, if the Increase of the Diameter of the Breast is but very fmall, and the Motion fcarce percep-H₃ tible.

IOI

tible. But if at the fame Time the greate Diameter of the Breaft, ftretching toward the Abdomen, is encreafed but in the leas Proportion, (as it always happens in every Act of Infpiration, upon Account of the Mon tion of the Diaphragm towards the Parts of the Abdomen,) then a fufficient Quantity of Air may rufh into the Thorax, and yet no Motion at all be obferved in the Breaft.

From thefe, and the like Inftances, we may be afcertained, that fo finall a Motion of the Breaft as is imperceptible to the Eye does not obftruct Refpiration and the Circulation of the Blood, that infeparable Attendant of Human Life.

22. Let us now apply our felves to that Division and Solution of the Parts of the Blood, which is not obtainable either in the Viscera, or the Lungs uninflated, but is entirely owing to the Inflation, and which is the Cause of the greatest Difference of Strength and all other Powers between the Fætus in the Womb and the Animal after the Birth, and is of the greatest Use and Service to Life.

While the Air is expired, it is evident that the oppofite Sides of the Sections of the Blood-Veffels are fuddenly reduced almost to a Contact; by which it is impossible but that the Parts of the Blood must be fo feparated, that not any two should cohere, nor any heavier Particle be joined to a lighter: And be-

because it is only requisite for the Performance of Secretion, that the Particles to be fecreted should not be larger than the Mouths of the Secretories, or if leffer, yet not too many, nor of too close a Cohefion, it follows, that upon the Comminution of the Particles of the Blood, which happens when the Lungs are inflated, and the Air expiring, that Advantage must be obtained, that the Blood without the unintelligible Affiftance of Ferments should discharge the Offices of all Secretions, and of confequence perform all that is neceffary for the Life and Convenience of Animals.

23. By the Affiftance of these Observations we may give a better Reafon than Dr. Lower's for the Variety of Colours in the Blood: Upon an Inflation of the Lungs, the ruddy Particles of the Blood being lighter than the others, are neceffarily more feparated from the reft; from whence is derived its florid Colour in its Passage to the left Ventricle, and of its Superficies immediately after Venefection, the red Particles fwimming at the Top by their natural Levity, or endeavouring at it, where there is the least Resistance; by their Elasticity, if they have any.

Befide, from hence another Phanomenon is eafily explained; Why the Blood, which, upon its being poured into a deep Vessel, is often of a dark Complexion, tho' expos'd to the Air; and yet when poured into a wide H4 and

and fhallow one, it feems florid: For, if there are any ruddy Particles in it, which have not as yet difengag'd themfelves, they will more eafily emerge thro' a few Superficies, than thro' an innumerable Quantity, and those of a greater Gravity. In the last Place, from hence we discover the Cause, why a viscid Blood, that contains fome ruddy Particles entangled in it, altho' it is exposed to the Air, is not for the Generality ruddy and florid (tho' it was of that Complexion, upon its first Emission from the Veins) after it has lost that Motion which was the Cause of its Non-cohesion, which it enjoyed in its proper Vesses.

24. I will only add, that by the Constriction of theBlo od-Veffels in the Lungs, the larger and last-compounded Particles of the Blood are divided and feparated from each other, and that the fame Caufe neceffarily makes the Parts of the leffer feparated Blood of a clofer Texture, and more difficultly refolvable into their first Elements. It is not now worthy of our Pains to examine curioully the Opinion of the Excellent Malphigius, who affirms, that a new Mixture, and new Figures agreeable to the Pores of the Parts, commence here; becaufe our former Proofs evince it to be imposfible, that fuch a Mixture or Confusion should be made in the Lungs, when there is only a Separation of Parts, unless he means that Hardness, and

and ftricter Cohefion of the leffer Parts, which we mentioned before: But for my Part, I can fee no Neceffity nor Use for new Figures in this Cafe.

25. And thus much I have writ with this View, to inform the Students in Phyfic the Ufefulnels of the Rule laid down at the Beginning of this Differtation, how many *Phæ*nomena's may be explained by a few known Qualities of Bodies: And I would advife Phyficians not to think that they have difpatch'd a Problem well, by recurring for a Solution of it to Figures of all Kinds, fubtle Air, and opposite Kinds of Salts, and Bodies, of which we know not fo much as the very Names, and inteftine Motions, and other Terms of a vain and pompous Ignorance.



A DIS-

105



A

DISSERTATION UPON THE

MOTION

Which reduces the

ALIMENT in the STOMACH,

To a FOR M proper for the

SUPPLY of the BLOOD.



E all experimentally know, that the Bodies of Animals lofe their Forms by Hunger, and an Abstinence from Food; that the Veffels

grow flaccid, and the Juices adapted to recruit the Circulation of the Blood fail in their Office; and, in one Word, that Animals die: It is as plain too, by Experience, that the Parts of the Fibres, Fluids, and Veffels, that make up the Form of an animal Oeconomy, fuffer even in the foundeft Bodies by Motion; that they are difunited, wore away, and impaired; and that by the Force of the natural Circulation of the Blood, that is, by the

Of the MOTION, UC. 107

the very Conditions and Laws of Life it felf, Death becomes necessary : And hence is caufed that continual Perspiration thro' the fudorific Veffels, and the Pores of the Skin : Since, as we explained it in another Differtation, all Secretion is made merely by the Force which the Heart impresses upon the Blood, which compels all Fluids to endeayour to pass thro' those Parts where there is the leaft Power of Refiftance. Wherefore, if we regard only that continual Perspiration, it is plainly neceffary that there should be a Supply of Fluids to the empty, and an Addition of Parts to the decay'd Vessels in such a Proportion, as either upon a Trial by Weight we shall find is lost, as the excellent Sanctorius advises, or upon our own Observation of the Diftances of Time, as Hunger induces the Generality to practice. From whence it follows, that the Conditions required for the Supply of those Diminutions of the Body, are a Fluid disposed to Sanguification, and a Compound of Particles fimilar to the Compound which is decayed; which is neceffary if we suppose the Animal to continue like it felf.

2. But it is evident to any one who regards those Operations which the Anatomy of the Body, and the Actions of Animals, demonstrate, that the Aliment acquires in the Stomach and the Intestines that particular Facility of Motion which qualifies it to mix

108 Of the MOTION

mix with the Blood. And therefore, if we can find the Nature and Quality of that Action in the Stomach, or what Similitude, or Proportion that Caufe of the Fluidity of the Aliment in the Inteffines bears to other Caufes, which either are, or are accounted more known, we must be allowed to have folved this Question; and most Physicians seem to me to have erred in the Solution of this Queftion, because they did not fufficiently understand what the Question was: For we do not look for a Caufe which has a Power to change all Sorts of Substances into a Fluid commiscible with the Blood, and confisting of Parts fimilar to the Parts loft, (now that Similitude is an Equality of Magnitude, Gravity, and Number,) but only fuch a Caufe as has a Power on fome Bodies, fuch as Mankind generally use for Food and Nutriment, and can convert them into a Fluid fit for Circulation. For then observing that there were fome Animals which would devour and fend into the Stomach the hardeft Metals and Minerals, immediately concluded that they were to find a Caufe which had a Force to colliquate any fort of Substances which were offered to the Stomach. And accordingly you may obferve, that they have introduced into the Stomach, either certain powerful Damons, and exalted invisible Spirits, or Ferments, and other Fluids, of various Denominations, which are fup-

of the STOMACH. 109

supposed able to diffolve any manner of Substances: But had they remembred the State of the Question, and that all we wanted, was fuch a Caufe, or the Knowledge of fuch a Caufe, whereby certain folid Bodies (the common Food and Nutriment of Man) might be changed into Fluids adapted to our Nutriment, that is, into Liquids which could circulate with the Blood, and fupply it with Parts of almost the fame Magnitude, Gravity, and Number, with those Parts which, either by the Force of Motion, or Perspiration, were difperfed beyond the Compais of Circulation, and the Course of the Blood ; and had they, in the next Place, observed that those Animals were not nourished by the hard Substances they devoured, then would they eafily have feen, that fuch a Force only was fought for which could diffolve the folid Parts of other Aliments, fo as to turn to our Nutriment; or how fuch Parts could be reduced in our Stomachs to a Fluidity fufficient for that Purpofe. All which, if I am not miftaken, may be explained without the Affiftance of a Damon, or a Stygian Liquor.

3. It is plain, that what is requisite for the most easy and fimple Solution of this Queftion, is, to find fuch folid Bodies to be fent into the Stomach for Nutriment, as may, by the least Alteration of their own Substance, become nutrimental to the Animal;

110 Of the MOTION

mal; it is neceffary too that that Change should be attended with a Facility of Motion, as is plain from the allowed Nature of a living Animal, whofe Life and Nutriment depend upon the Circulation. Now fince the folid Parts of other Animals, upon which we feed, when reduced into a liquid or fluid State, are by the least Alteration adapted to nourish us, because they bring with them Parts fimilar to those we lose, and fo by the Hypothefis are adapted to Circulation; therefore it is manifest, that the folid Parts of proper Animals are those Bodies which are required in the Queftion : And therefore we are now only to look for a proper Caufe, or what is the most fimple and natural Force which can convert those Parts contained in the Stomach into Fluids fit to circulate with the Blood.

And, that we may make as few Miftakes as can be in the Search of this Caufe, I would remark, that it ought to be fuch which can neither diffolve the Stomach, nor the Flefh of the Animal it is to nourifh, nor fuch as can eafily colliquate the Parts of others by the Force of a chymical Fire, or a *Stygian Menftruum*, (to fpeak in that way,) for this is compatible with the Life of the Animal; nor must it proceed fo flowly, as that Caufe, by which the folid Parts of Animals, without the Affiftance of Art, and being left to themfelves, refolve into Putrefaction. Thefe

of the STOMACH. III

These Postulata I may justly claim, which however will quickly be made more evident.

4. It is but a reasonable Postulatum of mine, to require a Caufe able to diffolve the Parts of other Animals in our Stomach, which cannot diffolve the Parts of the Stomach it felf by that Action, by which it alters the folid Parts of other Bodies into Fluids; for we are not here looking for a Caufe of fudden Death, but a Caufe that affifts in the maintaining of Life for some small Time. From whence it is evident, that there is no Fluid ; neither can that be accounted the Caufe in the Queftion, which inheres in, or is by any Means derived into the Stomach, and which, if the necessary Conditions are observed, and especially the Postulatum in this Paragraph, can diffolve, or convert the Parts of other Animals ingested into the Stomach, into a Fluid proper for Nutriment. Because, from what we have observed in the former Paragraph, it is plain that fuch a Caufe is required, as can re-diffolve the folid ingefted Parts of Animals into those very Particles, as near as may be, or Particles like them, out of which those Parts were before formed in other Animals, upon their Separation from their Fluids. Wherefore, fince a Fluid that abounds with a Ferment, or can by any means diffolve the folid ingefted Parts of other Animals, must by the same Action neceffarily diffolve the Parts of the Veffels in the

112 Of the MOTION

the Animal, and the Stomach in which it inheres, or into which it is derived, it easily follows, that those Animals which we fee are nourished by ingested Food, without any Injury to their Stomachs, contain in their Stomachs no Ferment at all, or no Liquid which can diffolve, digeft, and convert into Chyle folid Aliment; nor would fuch a Fluid remove the Difficulty of the Question, fince it would always remain to be explained how it should happen, that any Fluid should diffolve one Substance into the defired Parts; and those out of which it was lately compounded, and yet should not disfolve another Substance into the fame Parts, which is in the like Degree, and as frequently its Subject of Operation, or which is always and in the fame Manner expos'd to its Action, altho' this other Substance is compounded of the same Parts neither more in Number, nor stricter in their Union. And indeed it were miraculous, if a Liquid diffolving and digefting the Food of the Stomach, should not diffolve those Parts which are not more folid than the Food it felf, and which, if exfected from another Animal of the fame Nature, and ingefted into the Stomach, would immediately be diffolved in it. So that we may well wonder what fort of Solvers of Medical Problems they were, who thought they had rightly explain'd the Manner of the Digestion of the Food in the Sto-

of the STOMACH.

Stomach, when they had not explained, nor fo much as attempted to explain the Reafon, why, upon the Digeftion of Food in the Stomach, which is as eafily digeftible as the Food, yet the Stomach it felf fhould not be diffolved? And this Queftion is the fame as that which those famous Men had folved, after their Way of folving-

5. Hence it is manifelt, that neither a Fluid abounding with an Acid or Volatile Body, nor a Salt or Acrid, nor a Compound of these or other Particles of any Nature, are the Inftruments of the Dissolution and Digestion of Food in the Stomachs of Animals: Much less can this Operation be successfully performed by the invisible Spirits of Helmont and Wedelius, or the Dæmon of Doleus.

From hence we conclude too, that Digeftion is not performed (as *John Bohnius* fays and imagines in his * *Anatomico-Phyfological Circle*) by the Affiftance of a digeftive Liquor or *Menstruum* derived from the falival Glands and those of the Stomach, which he calls not an Acid, but a diluted Salt; and which, by the inteftine and vital Motion of its Parts, imbibes and adapts to it felf, and fo forms a fort of an Extract from the Food, of a milky and mucilaginous Substance, agreeable to its own Nature, and proper for I the

* See Page 149 of his Circle,

114 Of the MOTION

the Nutriment of the Body. This Perform certainly is mistaken in many Instances; but it is enough for me to observe, that this Liquid or vital Dissolvent of Bohnius and Wedelius, and many others, can and ought, after the same Manner, to attract to it self, and imbibe the diffolvable Substance of the Stomach in which it inheres, and which is as agreeable to it, and fubject to be converted into Nutriment: Which fince it does not. we conclude that neither does it perform what Bohnius and Wedelius by their Hypothesis fuppose, but do not prove. It is to no purpole for any one to make an Objection from the Roughness of the Superficies of the Stomach, and the vifcous Nature of the Phlegm. which are capable of defending it from the Injuries of the diffolving or corrofive Liquid or Ferment. For the Question is, how it comes to pass that any Ferment should diffolve Flesh, and not diffolve Fibres, whose Cohefion is much weaker than that of Flesh? Now that vifcous Phlegm, by its entangling and blunting the fubtle Ferment, or the Air, or digeftive Fluid, perpetually difcharged from the Coats of the Stomachs, equally defends the Food as well as the Stomach from any Injury, and fo fpoils and baffles all Digestion.

6. And hitherto we have deliver'd only the Opinion of those who have not hit upon a happy Solution of the Question; or off those,

of the STOMACH.

those, who have honoured a Question, that bears no Relation to this, with the Name of a true Solution.

We must now repeat and inculcate into the Reader, that whatever Men receive and ingest into the Stomach for the Confervation of Life, or the Circulation, and the Nutriment of the Body, are either Animals or Vegetables, that is, Animals of the higher or lower Clafs of Beings, fince both thefe enjoy a Circulation of Fluids, and confift of small Pipes and Fluids that supply and nourish those Pipes. From whence it appears, that the Foods which Men use, and by the Direction of Nature ought to use, confift of fuch Parts as exhibit the Form and Nature of Pipes and Fluids adapted to change into fuch Pipes. For whatever the Action was by which the Parts of a Fluid, that nourish any Veffel or flefhy Substance, were first altered into the Magnitude and Figure, and other Qualities of a proper Aliment adjoinable to that Veffel, yet fome Parts of the nutrimental Fluid were merely by the Force of the fubfequent Fluid drove clofe and adjoined to that Vessel for its Reparation : And it is allowed by all, that Nutrition is performed by a Conjunction and Infinuation of Parts fecreted from a Fluid into Spaces left vacant by the Seceffion of others of a fimilar Bulk and Figure. And therefore it is plain, that the Parts of Animals refolved after the T 2 moft

IIS

116. Of the MOTION

moft fimple Manner, (that is, in fuch an Order, that those which cohered last should be feparated first, and the exterior Parts first worked upon by an external Cause,) will necessarily change into a Fluid replete with Parts proper for the Nutrition of an Animal, that is, it will change to compound a Substance confisting of Pipes, and Fluids, alterable into Pipes.

7. Again, it deferves our Obfervation, that those Substances, which neither composed the Bodies of Animals nor Vegetables, cannot nourish the Animal, altho' they may be changed by the Action of the Stomach; and therefore that they are not adjoined to the Vessels for their Reparation, fince they are not changed by the Action of the Stomach into a Fluid adapted to repair the Parts of Animals.

From whence I conclude, that nothing more is neceffary for the Performance of Digeftion, and the Diffolution of the Food in the Stomach, than the Separation of fome Maffes and Particles from each other, which were before united into one Body, by that Action which performed Nutrition; nor have our Stomachs any other Office in this Matter, than to force the Particles united before in the Form of Veffels and Fibres, to a Separation into their former Confusion, or as near to that State as can be, which they enjoyed when they were to be difpofed for the

of the STOMACH. 117

the Nutrition of the Parts; and therefore no other Force than this is neceffary; for if any other were, and that Force can change Bodies into Figures entirely new, and all Degrees of Magnitude, then other Things befide Animals ought to contribute to our Nourifhment.

Now fince we are nourifhed only by the Parts of Animals of every Clafs and Order, and fince we have fhewn that there is no Fluid in the Stomach, whole Ferment prepares the Food for our Nutriment, it follows, that it is only the Motion of the Stomach working and comminuting the Food, which finishes Digestion by a Separation of the last-formed Parts into Pipes and Fibres of fuch a Nature as is observable in Animals.

8. Because it is not to be questioned, but the fame Force, or one fimilar and equal to it, by which the Parts were first fecreted from an Animal Fluid into the Pores of the Body for the Office of Nutrition, ought to be sufficient for a Reseparation of them, and reducing them into Figures not much different from, nor much unlike those which it at first enjoyed. But it is plain, that the nutritive Particles, which are to be adjoined to the Parts, are adjoined merely by the Force of the Heart and Arteries propelling the Blood, and performing all Secretions, as we explained before; and there-1 3 fore

Of the MOTION

fore a fimilar Force of the Coats of the Stomach, affisted by the Diaphragm, and the Muscles of the Abdomen can rediffolve the Masses fo united into Parts, as near as may be to those from which it was lately compounded; neither is there any Obstruction to fuch a Comminution, but that the Coats of the Stomach and the Food cannot fo often and fo eafily come to a Contact in their smallest Parts, as the Parts of Fluids can: From whence it will happen, that the Chyle does not generally confift of Parts fo fmall as those of the Blood, especially that Blood which fuffers a new Digestion or Comminution in the Lungs. And there is one Particular which I defire may be observed in this Place, which is, as the Force of the Blood is greater in the larger Veffels, and those fituated near the Heart, fo the Parts conjoined by that Force for the Nutrition of those Vessels, cohere fo ftrongly, that it is more difficult for the Force of the Stomach to overcome that Cohefion, than it is for it to rediffolve those Parts, which are to fupply Nutrition in the Veffels of a leffer Size, and more diftant from the Heart: For the Force is, cæteris paribus, more languid in the leffer Arterial Veffels, becaufe they are Parts of a Cone nearer to their Bafe: For altho' the Trunk of the Arteries is larger than any distinct Branches, yet it is less than all of them taken together; and the whole Bundle of the Arteries is to be confider'd

of the STOMACH. 119

fider'd as a Cone whose Vertex is situated toward the Heart, and its Base toward the Extremes of the Body. And from hence is the Reafon, why, in the exterior Arteries, or those more remote from the Heart, the Motion of the Blood, as it pours from narrower Passages into larger, is by Degrees retarded; but a more languid Force is always the Caufe of a flower Motion. And it is manifest, that this is the easiest and simplest Method of folving the Queftion proposed, because this makes an easy Liquefaction of the ingefted Solids in the Stomach, without the Affistance of a foreign Fluid; and yet, excepting the Fluidity, there is the least Alteration made in the Food (as being taken from an Animal) to adapt it for the Office of Nutrition.

9. Our next Business is, to shew that the Caufe we affign for Digeftion, and the Solution of the Food, which is part of an Animal Body, cannot diffolve nor comminute the Coats of the Stomach, in which the ingested Food is received. For it feldom happens that the Coats of the Stomach come to a mutual Contact, and the Contacts that are made between the comminuting Food, and the Coats of the Stomach, are always on the fame Parts of the Food, but from fucceffively different Parts of the Coats of the Stomach. However, this is the beft Reafon to folve the Matter. The Diminution of the Parts 14

120 Of the MOTION

Parts of the Coats of the Stomach, which are taken away by this Contact or Attrition, is eafily repaired from the Matter of Nutrition, which is continually difpatched from the Store of the circulating Blood for the Nutrition of the Parts; whereas there is no Recruit for the Parts of the Food, which are abraded by the Action of the Stomach. And hence it happens partly that Worms and other Animalcula live conveniently enough in the Stomach, and partly becaufe as they are alive, they by their Motion withdraw themfelves from the Strokes of the Stomach, which it is impossible for dead Substances, or their Parts, to escape. And what is of great Moment in this Cafe, if a given Body striking it felf with a given Force on a Membrane, can perforate it, the Number of Membranes may be increased to fuch a Proportion, that the fame Force being given, the exterior Membrane shall not be perforated: Because the Number may be increased to that Degree, that Part of the given Force (which would not be ftrong enough to perforate the fingle, exterior, unfupported Membrane) would be exerted upon the exterior, and the other remaining Force fpent upon the other Membranes. And fince Abrasion is a Perforation of a Membrane, or of an exterior Surface, which (when we fpeak of the Stomach) is fupported by many Membranes, the Proposition is evident.

of the'STOMACH. 121

dent; and indeed it is plain, that the Superficies of a Beam would not be broke by the Stroke of my Finger, which however would be broke, if the Thicknefs of the Beam was leffened, that is, the Number of its Surfaces diminifhed : But the Thicknefs of a Body does not elud the Force of a corrofive Fluid, and the exterior equal Superficies of Bodies of an unequal Thicknefs are diffolved by the fame Force of a corrofive Fluid, and in the fame Time, if other Circumftances are equal.

10. And here arifes a Phanomenon, which the Patrons of a Ferment or a digeftive Liquid cannot tell how to folve. It is obferved, for Instance, that Digestion is performed better in the Stomach during the Winter, and in a cold Air, than in Summer; which can arife from no other Caufe than the Increase of the muscular Force (as at that Seafon the Force of all the Muscles is greater) and the compreffive Force of the Stomach, and the Abdomen. But the Force of the Muscles is increased in the Winter and cold Seafons, becaufe then the contractile Fibres become fhorter (for which Reafon the fame Force will draw them into a greater Shortnefs, and caufe a greater Inflation) from the fame Caufes as a Piece of Iron of any Length is found fhorter in the Winter than in the Summer; and fo an Iron Chain, as it grows cold, becomes shorter than it was when
when it was hot, as is evident from the Experiment. But the Completion of this Matter depends upon the different Quantity of Perspiration: For the Excellent Sanctorius has informed us, in the 29th and 41ft of his Statics, and the fecond Section, that Animals retain daily about a Pound of perspirable Matter in the Winter, which they emit in the Summer. From whence it is manifest, that there is an Influx of a greater Quantity of Fluids into the Muscles in the Winter, than in the Summer, and by confequence that this performs all those Matters, which any one may in vain expect from Acids, and other Liquors, that have no Place in found Animals, and which are foreign to that Seafon of the Year; for the Produce of Acids is greater in the Summer, and then Liquors turn foonest to an Acidity. But in this Place I remark, that the Encrease of the Saliva peculiar to the Winter, belongs to and depends upon the too great Diminution of Perfpiration. I would have those take Notice of this Remark, whose Ignorance of a Method for the Difcovery of Truth in the Sciences, may perhaps put them upon framing new Winter Refources of Phlegm, in order to illustrate this Phanomenon.

11. For we have proved, that the Saliva, and whatever Fluid that is which defcends into the Stomach, are no more fitted and adapted to diffolve the Food, than the Superficies

of the STOMACH. 123

perficies of the Stomach, and those fine Fibres, which are much more tender than any ingested Food, even after it has been worked by the Teeth.

But there is no Occasion now for a curious Discussion of the Quality of the Saliva, that having been the Subject of every Writer, and therefore I had no Inclination to propose it to my Readers in this Place: Neither have I thought it proper to defcribe the Action of the Teeth, a Subject equally common, nor any other Circumstances attendant upon the working of the Chyle, which Dr. Lister, that most Learned and Candid Improver of Phyfic, has most happily performed, and left others only the Glory of borrowing from him. But fince that Great Man feems to attribute too much to Perspiration, which he fuspects to be greater in the Stomach in the Time of Winter than Summer, it is proper for us to make a more curious Enquiry into that Opinion. The Air is a Fluid which defcends as well into the Stomach as into the Lungs, rushing in whereever it finds an Entrance, whether the Heat or Cold be exceffive : Wherefore, if the Air contributes any Thing by its Winter Quality to the Diminution of Perspiration, the Superficies of the Stomach will bear its Effects in the same Manner as the exterior Skin. Suppose then, that the Winter Air obstructs Perspiration, the Summer promotes it, fince

fince both are diffused about the Skin, and defcend into the Stomach, the Perspiration of the Stomach in Winter will be to the Perspiration of the same in Summer, as the Skin in Winter is to the exterior Skin of the fame in Summer, which confiderably exceeds the Winter, as Sanctorius has proved.

But the Authority of the Great Hippocrates introduced this Maxim, who affirmed That Mens Stomachs were warmeft in the Winter: For he observed that the Stomach was ftrongest in the Winter; and then affumed from a Sect of Philosophy, that Digestion was performed by Heat; from all which he deduced, that a greater Heat must: proceed from the Stomach in the Winter.

12. From hence it follows, that they whofe Stomachs abound with any Fluid in too great a Quantity, or too viscid a Nature, cannot digeft their Food well, nor are at that Time in a State of Health, the contrary of all which would happen, if Digeftion were performed by the Afistance of a diffolvent Fluid. But the Caufe of this Phanomenon is widely different from any Thing which the Patrons of Ferments are able to produce: For I think it is evident from what has been before faid, that any Fluid in the Stomach, in fo large a Quantity, that there is no Place into which it can pais with a fufficient Quickness and Facility, or of fo viscid and refifting a Quality, as not to be foon and by

of the STOMACA.

by a fmaller Force removeable from the Place that feparates the interior Superficies of the Stomach, and the exterior of the ingefted Food, neceffarily obftructs and retards Digeftion: For it is neceffary upon the Interpolition of any Fluid too copious, or too vifcid, that the Force of the Muscles of the Stomach must be eluded, upon which only, fince there is no Ferment nor digeftive Liquid, Concoction must depend.

And that fome Advantage may be made from these Observations, it deserves our farther Observation, that the heavier the interpoling Fluid in the Stomach is, it will more refift the Motion of the Stomach, and both frustrate the Force of Motion and Contact, and fo prevent any Digeftion, if the Quantity of the Fluid is fuch, as to make it neceffarily, by its own Weight, diffused every where round the Food, as is requifite in a Fluid which is to diffolve and digeft. From whence it follows, that acid Liquors, fince they are of a heavier Nature, and falt too, obstruct Digestion; nor is that Gravity the Caufe why Acids are fo difficultly removed, and carried off from the Stomach.

13. From what we have demonstrated in the 9th Paragraph, it is evident, that fmall Vessels, not supported by a sufficient Number of Membranes, as the Stomach is, the oftner they reduce their opposite Sides to a Contact, must necessarily be oftner impaired, and

and fooner broke. For if the Vessels almost fall together, while their opposite Coats meet with a certain Force, fo that almost every intervening Fluid shall be fo expelled as to leave nothing between, there will then be an Attrition of the Coats. And because this is the Cafe in the Lungs and its Veffels, as we fhew in another Place, therefore we ought not to wonder that Erofion, and Symptoms of Erofions, happen more eafily and frequently in the Lungs, than in any other of the Viscera. But this will more efpecially happen to those who live in a thick Air, abounding with the mineral Fumes of Sea-Coal, which are therefore heavier, and compress the Veffels of the Lungs with a greater Force.

From these Observations we may give a plain Solution of a Queftion which Dr. Willis proposes, What is the Cause why most Afthmatical Persons breath more easily in a Country Air, and yet it is more eafy to fome to use the London Air? The Doctor speaks of his own Countrymen. It is evident, that if the Gravity and elaftic Force of the attracted Air remain the fame, the fame Animal will refpire with an equal Facility, or the Blood of the fame Animal will pass thro' the Veficles of the Lungs with an equal Facility: And if the Force of the Air continuing the fame, the Blood does not pass with the fame Facility, then either the Flexility of the Veffels,

of the 'STOMACH' 127

fels, or the Facility of the Blood in its Motion, must be fo changed, that the Refiftance made by the Lungs must be encreased. Wherefore it is no Wonder, that they who enjoy the Country Air with Eafe and Health, cannot bear with the fame Eafe the heavier Air, and that of London, not only admitted into their Lungs, where the minute mineral Particles conveyed in the Smoke flick clofe, but also cannot bear it as diffused round their whole Bodies: Nor ought it to feem incredible if they who, by Nature, or by Diftemper, that is, by fome Change of Art, or the Course of their Lives, have their Veffels and the Blood in the Lungs become of a more refifting Nature, or the former become lefs flexible, or the latter less fluid, can bear the heavy London Air better than the lighter Country Air.

From whence it is plain, how wide from the Purpose Dr. Willis spoke upon this Subject, in the 2d Part, 1st Section of the 6th Chapter of his Treatife of the Operation of Medicines, where he affigns the finer Texture of their Veffels, as the Reafon why fome breathe more freely in London, never folving, but perplexing the Queftion with the Fumes of Sulphur, and fuch Words, while he neglects the known Property of the Gravity, which is greater in those Particles of Sea-Coal that pass into Smoak, and are drawn in with the Air, than it is in those 15. But of Turf and Wood.

14. But this Attrition does not obtain in other Veffels, which are indeed often expofed to the Air, but yet are fupported, as was before proved; among which I reckon the Stomach. But the Veffels and Veficles of the Lungs are fo far from being fupported by any Structure of Muscles and Membranes, that they are prefied and impaired every Minute of our Lives between each Act of Respiration by the internal Superficies of the Ribs.

From whence it evidently follows, that it is to no Purpose for Wedelius, in the 6th Chapter of his Physiologia Reformata, to have used Abundance of Words to affert, that it is demonstrable to Sense, and the Evidence of Sight, that the Stomach contains a Salino-Sulphureous Ferment, and which he affirms is derived from a vital Fluid: For if this is true, then all the Blood-Veffels would be diffolved and digested by this intercurrent Fluid, (which is the greatest Part of the Blood,) by the fame Means as Flesh and other Things, who Substances are not much harder than those Vessels, are diffolved by the Effusion of the fame into the Stomach. And from these few Observations it appears, how ineffectual the Hypothesis of an Acid or Ferment are for the Explanation of these Phanomena's, and how much easier it is for us to remove the Difficulties that prefs this Queftion by Properties which are more known,

of the STOMACH. 129

known, and of which we have a greater Certainty.

15. No one, I prefume, who agrees with these Notions of mine, will for the future have any Doubt, whether Digeftion is performed best after Meals, if affisted by a gentle and eafy Walk, or fome other unlaborious Exercife of the Body : For as long as Motion fo affifts and increases the Comminution. of the Food by the Action of the Diaphragm, and other Muscles, as not to force the Chyle to leave the Stomach, and enter the Lacteals too foon, that is, before the Parts are reduced to a fufficient Minuteness, (in which Cafe a Crudity happens, which therefore confifts in the Comminution of the Food into Parts of too large a Size, fome of which however can enter the Lacteals,) fo long a Concoction equally good is performed fooner, and a better Concoction in equal Time, or, which is the fame, there is a Division of the Food made into Parts of a more proper Fluidity, and more adapted to Nutrition. For this Reason it is, that Digestion is not fo well performed in Perfons afleep, as in those awake. And this may fuffice for a Phyfical Explication for our first Concoction, as we term it, which is previous, and is celebrated much after the fame Manner, as that which we in another Place attribute to the fecond Concoction performed in the Lungs of born Animals. But we had before explained that K Con-

Concoction, of which the third, in the common Acceptation, is reckoned one Part, viz. that Secretion, which is made in the Glands and Vifcera, of which Nutrition, celebrated by the Phyfician for the third Concoction, is a Species.

16. There is no Occasion now for a tedious Proof to shew, that after the Concoction in the Stomach and Lungs is performed, the Blood is become adapted to the Nutriment of the Animal, tho' it fuffers no Change by a Ferment and Figures peculiar to the Parts, fince these Affistances are not in Nature, or of no Use: It remains then that we finish this Subject, the previous Concoctions being made merely by the Force of the Heart and Arteries, by which any Particle of the Blood is made to pafs into fome Place, into which it is drove by others, if the Place be capable of receiving it: And therefore fince all cannot be expelled into Secretories, (becaufe thefe are neither fufficient in Number, nor Amplitude, or where they are, there can be not Nutrition,) or into Veffels commonly accounted Secretories, there is a Neceffity that fome should be fecreted into Spaces of Fibres. which make up empty Veffels, which yet are fo clofe, that the Particle which enters. and is forced onwards from behind, may come to a Contact on all Sides with more Particles in a State of Reft; which Particle. if it had met with an empty Space much lefs. than

of the STOMACH.

than it felf in the Superficies of the Canal, perhaps by being drove thro' it had avoided that Contact, and fo could not have repaired that Canal with any Nutrition. Nutrition then confifts in reftoring a Fulnefs of all the Vessels, which causes a Secretion of Part of its own Fluid into the Membrane of every Canal, in the Room of the Part discharged by the Fibres. From hence it evidently appears, that every Canal in an Animal is nourished by a Fluid, which it often carries within itself. For it is plain a Fluid cannot eafily break thro' the Sides of its Canal, otherwife those Sides could not compose a Canal proper for the Conveyance of that Fluid; and that there is no Pore of the Coats of the Veffel, but what the Parts of the Fluid, which it conveys, can penetrate and work themfelves into, if the Orifice of that Pore, either by a Diffraction and Motion of the Part, or by Attrition and the Efcape of fome Particles from the Contact of the rest be but never so little widened and increafed, (for as long as the Orifice is not increafed, nothing of the Veffel is loft, and fo there is no Occasion for a Supply by Nutrition.) For they who imagine, that nothing can enter those Pores, but the most fubtle Fluids fecreted in the Brain, or other Places from the Blood, they I fay, do not feem to understand, that those very fubtle Fluids exifted fuch in the Blood before they were K 2 received

IZI

received by the fecreting Veffels, which are neither furnished with a Variety of Ferments, nor Figures.

17. But it is convenient, before we leave this Subject, to remove a Difficulty, which may impose upon an unwary Reader. For Instance, if we may believe the Porifis, we find by Experience that certain Liquors may be injected into certain Veffels with fufficient Ease, tho' certain Liquors of a greater Subtilty, and abounding with a Force of leffer Parts, or as yet accounted fuch, cannot be immitted into the fame Veffels with the fame Eafe. Since then the Paffage of a greater Body, where a leffer is excluded cannot be afcribed to a Difference of Size, in must be to a Difference of Figure. But in my Opinion, a very different Consequence is deducible from this: For fince it is evident by the Light of Reafon, that in two unequal Bodies, the greatest Diameter of one on which suppose equal to the least Diameter on the objected Orifice; but let one of the other, according to the Polition it approaches the Orifice in, be greater than the Diame ter of the Orifice; the first Body, whole Diameter is equal, can enter and pafs through that Orifice, and neceffarily exclude the fer cond Body, one of whole Diameters, which it then applies to the Veffel, is greater than the Diameter of the Orifice; and therefor becaufe the one Body paffes, and the Cir cumstance:

of the STOMACH. 133

cumstances continuing the same, the other does not, it evidently follows, that the Liquor confifts of Parts, of leffer Parts, or of Parts abfolutely lefs, than the fecond, altho' the Parts of the fecond may be more in Number, clofer united, and heavier, or even more visible, or have other Properties, by which the common People measure the Thickness or Magnitude of Liquor. From whence there is a Method laid open of investigating of what Liquors the Parts of their last Composition are least, that is, have the least Diameters.

18. I take leave to infer from hence, that nothing in the Stomach, nor the Inteffines, nor in the Lungs, and much lefs in the Heart, in fhort, that nothing in any Secretion, or in Nutrition, it felf can happen, which is capable of changing the Food into Chymical Spirits or volatile Salts, Sc. For when the Food is comminuted and concocted in the Stomach, the Parts which have the leaft Cohefion are constantly divided first, and separated with the greatest Ease. But the Parts, out of which the Vessels were last compounded, or by whofe Acceffion they were increased, cohere less than the Parts of those Parts, fince they were divided and fecreted from the reft by the Force of the Heart and the Blood, but the other were not. But after they were thus separated in the Stomach, fo as to flow with Eafe one K 3 over

over the other, then they are expell'd by the Motion of the Stomach into the Lasteals. From whence it follows, that there is nothing transacted in the Stomach, from whence one may certainly conclude that Salts, Sulphur, or other Bodies, that pass for Principles, can be extracted from the Concoction of the Food: Nor are they to be heard with Patience, who in treating of Phyfic, make use of fo precarious a Philofophy, who are not ashamed to affert, that there is a Diffolution of a Nutritive Sulphur made in the Stomach, and that Chylification is the Action of an invisible Spirit, that feparates and changes the Aliment (by the Help of a Heat and Ferment) into a Nutritive Oleo-aquofe Sulphur; and that an Analy fis of Alcali and Acid is made in the Stomach to relax the Union of the Sulphur : For that Sulphur is a fort of Reconciler of Salts, otherwife opposite to it felf, as Wolfangus Wedelius, an Author of great Gravity, endeavours to perfuade his Reader in the 9th Chapter of his Physiologia Reformata.

We must enter into another Course or Method of Reasoning, if we would advance the Theory of Physic to the Dignity of the Subject, and affert an Art glorious in it felf, and necessary to Mankind, from mean Conjectures, and the Scandal of Uncertainty. And an Instance of such a Method we have here given, in a Case of no great

of the STOMACH. 135

great Difficulty indeed, but fo much the more probable to be of greater Service for the future, as the Inconfiderablenefs of the Difficulty will lefs divert the Reader from a diftinct View of the Method. Becaufe, it is manifest, that nothing more is requisite to give a Physical Solution of this Question but to find fuch Solids to be ingested, as can most easily repair the Loss of the Parts that fly off from the Coats of the Vessels, and the Stock of the Fluids, and to fix upon the most simple Powers of the Stomach, or Powers to be applied in it, as are capable of reducing the ingefted Solids to fuch Fluids, out of the Parts of which thefe ingefted Solids were last made up and compounded. But it is plain, that the Parts of Vegetables, or of Animals of all Classes, answer to the first Quasitum, and that the Motion of the Stomach, and Abdomen, and the adjacent Mufcles, without a vain Enquiry after any other Affistance, sufficiently answer the second Requisite. But what is most necessary to observe here, is, that in the Solution of this, there was no Occasion for a Philosophical Knowledge of the Nature of Foods, or the Magnitude, or the Figure of Parts or Pores of them, or of the Motion of Fluids pailing thro' those Pores; nor was it useful in this Enquiry to have known, whether there were any paffing Fluid at all, or whether all the Parts of the Food were of the fame, no K 4

or a different Figure. But it is sufficient, it we know that a Solid which grew into that Substance by a Conjunction of Bodies, before. in a State of Fluidity, can be reduced into a fimilar Fluid, if those Parts are divided, and drove different Ways; and again, that there is a Conatus in the Stomach, by which the Parts of Solids may be fo divided, and then that the Fluid being reftored to its primitive Nature, or to it felf, will pass into the Substance of Vessels in the fame Manner as it did before into fimilar Veffels. And this is felf-evident, that fuch Alterations are agreeable to Bodies enjoining any Figure or Motion, and that this does not require any Knowledge of the intimate Effence of Things, or a penetrating Infpection into the lubtle and Phyfical Caufes of Philosophy. What I have advanced feems to me a Proof, that the Food cannot be concocted without the Affiftance of the Stomach, and the grinding Muscles of the Abdomen. It remains for me to prove, that the Powers of the Diaphragm, and the Muscles of the Abdomen, are of a Force fufficient to discharge the Office and Weight our Hypothesis lays upon them. Now these Powers, whether we investigate them by the Help of the 121 Proposition of Borellins's Works, or a Principle of Sir Ifaac Newton's, deducible from thence, will appear to be very extraordinary. Whoever calculates this Matter rightly, will find that the Powers

of

of the STOMACH.

137

of the Muscles are in a Ratio compounded of the Ratio of the Longitudes, Latitudes, and Profundities, that is, in a Ratio of homogeneous Solids or Weights. But the mean Weight of the Muscle that bends the Third Joint of the Man's Thumb is equal to 122 Grains; that of the Right Muscles of the Abdomen to 3720; that of the Pyramidals to 126; of the Oblique Ascending to 2640; of the Tranverse 2640; of the Oblique Descending to 2040; the Weight of the Diaphragm is equal to 3960 Grains. Wherefore the Sum of the Weights of the Muscles of the Abdomen adapted to this Office is equal to 15126 Grains.

Now according to the 126th Proposition of Borellius's first Book of the Motion of Animals, the Power of the Flexor of the Thumb is equal to 3120 Pounds Weight; and therefore as 122 Grains are to 3720 Pound, fo 15126 Grains are to 461219 Pound. From hence it is plain, that the Powers of these Muscles are not inferior to the Powers of any Mill Stone: And he who knows that the Author of Nature never attempts any Thing in vain, nor performs one Thing by many Means, but many Things by a single one, will eafily acknowledge that the muscular Action of the Stomach, and the united Actions of the Muscles compreffing the Stomach, are those Forces, which reduce the Food ingefted into the Stomach into a Fluid, adapted for the Nutri-

138 Of the MOTION, &c.

Nutriment of the Animal, and the Supply of the Decays of the Blood. But altho' we had not made use of the Powers of the Muscles of the Abdomen in this Case, yet the Powers of the Stomach it felf are fufficient to perform this Duty as fuccefsfully as we could wish. The mean Weight of a human Stomach is 8 Ounces, and therefore by making a Calculation after the Manner of the preceding, the Power of the Muscle of the Stomach will be found equal to the Weight 12951 Pound, which is quadruple the natural Power of the Heart, by the 67th Proposition of the fecond Part of Borellius upon the Motion of Animals, which proves that the latter is about 3000.



A SO-

SOLUTION OFTHE

PROBLEM

Concerning

INVENTORS



HAVE long fince made it my Observation, that nothing was more destructive to any State, than the Credulity of the People, and what naturally follows that, a perpetual Defire of Innovation. For as often as Men of Defign and Cunning have begun to flide into their Hearts and good Opinion to that Degree, as to gain an implicite Confidence from the People, we may observe, that the Cuftoms of that State have been fubverted, the Laws and Acts of their An-

ceftors repealed, all Rights, both human and divine, violated, as ftanding in the Way, and obstructing the Defire of Innovation, and the Measures of the Deceivers of the Populace.

But I don't at all wonder, that the Artifices of the Cunning fhould gain more upon the unthinking Multitude, than the Reafons of the Wife and Learned; I rather wonder that fome of the first Genius's and divine Spirits should often follow the Example of the People, and be seduced by the Authority of those whom they exceed in all Kinds of honourable Arts, and all Degrees of Vertue.

Wherefore it feems to me, that I shall acquit my felf well, if I can fhew those who are willing to cultivate Truth and Honour a Way to vindicate themselves from so base a Slavery, and remove that Cloud from their Minds, which the Authority of a few Men has spread before the Face of Truth: For to endeavour to bring the Vulgar to the Right, were an Undertaking of a Mad Man; but in order to do fome Service to those of better Skill, and who are enflamed with a Defire of attaining higher Arts, I shall shew, in this Oration, in what Cafes, and the Authority of what Perfons ought to move us, or what fort of Men deferve our Credit, and . as Relaters of what Facts, and, at the fame Time, folve what was never before attempt-

ed,

ed, the noble Problem of Inventors. In the Purfuit of this, I fhall use the Terms of Author, Inventor, Observer, and Historian, for one and the fame Idea: And I would have it observed, that there are two Cases in this Problem; for either the Authority of the Inventor enters into the Conditions of the Problem, or it does not. The following Paragraphs will folve the first Case.

2. We ought to make a nice Diffinction between those Things which are demonstrated by their own Evidence, and those that are fo by the Light of other Things, that is, between fuch Things whofe Evidence is fuch, that when we have once underftood their Proofs, we cannot conceive them to be otherwife, and those Things which are neither demonstrated from themselves, nor other Things. Of the first Kind is this, The Whole is greater than the Part; of the fecond, this, Pythagoras found out the 47th Propo-Sition of the first Book of Euclid. By Things demonstrated, I understand then fuch Things whofe Proofs make it impossible that they should be otherwife than they are; from whence it follows, that they are always the fame, and unalterable: But by Things not demonstrated, I mean fuch, whose Proofs do not make it impossible but that they may be otherwife; from whence it cannot be concluded that they are always the fame. Arguments fuited to the first Kind, are called

led Demonstrations, to the latter Probabilities. Hence it appears, that no finite Number of Probabilities is equivalent to a Demonstration; and again, that we are by no Means fo certain in giving our Affent to Things not demonstrated, as when we give it to Things demonstrated; and therefore we ought not to adhere fo positively to an Opinion unsupported by Demonstration, as to another that has that on its fide.

3. We must further observe, that they who will allow the Credit of a Writer's or Author's Observations, that is, they who propose an Inventor, whose Authority enters into the Conditions of the Question, necessarily assume these Propositions for Truth:

I. That we always believe the Evidence of our Senfes; which wants no Proof.

II. That the Inventors of the Observation propos'd, always told the same to others which they had found by the Assistance of their Senses; which is not a Demonstration.

III. That those Persons, thro' whose Hands the Observation comes deliver'd down to us, have in all Ages been so honess, as not to deliver any Thing to Posterity different from what they receiv'd from their Predecess; which is not demonstrated.

IV. If

IV. If an ancient Obfervation is deliver'd without being put in Writing, then we muft affume this Proposition for a Truth, that those Perfons through whose Hands it is deliver'd to us, never have forgot the whole or any Part of that Observation; which is far from being a Demonstration.

From whence it follows, 1/t, That we are more certain of Things demonstrated, than of any Fact taken from the Credit of Hiftory, containing fuch Observations. And, 2*dly*, That we are more certain of Things, the Knowledge of which we receive by our Senses, than those we know from the Help of such Histories; and therefore that an Argument drawn from the Credit of such Hiftories, is not of Force against Demonstration, or the Evidences of Sense.

4. Befides, it follows from hence, that we are not fo certain of the Truth of an Obfervation, as the Authors of it were: For they only use the first Proposition as a Thing certain and demonstrated; we by trusting to them, affume that, and the fecond too, as a Demonstration; and, after the fame Manner, that we are not fo certain of the Truth of an old Observation, or one that being formerly transfacted, cannot be made again, as of a new one, or one which may be made at the Pleasure of the Observer; because in affenting

ing to a new Relation of Fact, we only take for granted the first and fecond Proposition; but, in an old one, we assume not only them as Truth, but the third Propofition too. In the last Place, we are not fo certain of the Truth of an unwritten Hiftory of Facts, as of the Truth of a written one; because, in the giving Assent to the Credit of the written, we only allow the three first Propositions as demonstrated; but when we credit an unwritten one, we must make use of the fourth Proposition too as demonstrated, tho' it is not fo: And by confequence we embrace more Things as demonstrated, which are not fo in one Cafe, than we do in the other, that is, more Things which have the greatest Marks of Uncertainty.

5. It is eafy to perceive from hence, that no Sayings of any Inventor whole Authotity enters into the Conditions of the Queftion, fuch as Aristotle with the Peripateticks, and Hippocrates with fome Phylicians, and others with others, ought to be fo interpreted as to contradict any Demonstration, or Evidence of Senfe, or even any Opinion which is equal to an Evidence, founded upon Ideas fupplied by the Senfes; or to contradict any Proposition, tho' undemonstrated, upon which all historical Credit depends; or, laftly, any Opinion which is fupported by Foundations not less probable than these Axioms are, upon which the Authority

thority of Hiftory depends. And we ought always to remember, that the Liberty to be exercifed in interpreting of Hiftory, is fo much the leffer, as the Authority of the Inventor or Hiftorian is greater, or the fewer the Number of Things undemonstrated is, upon which, as taken for demonstrated, the Hiftory is founded.

6. But let us proceed to the fecond State of the Problem, that is, when the Authority of the Inventor does not enter into the Conditions of the Queftion. The Difficulty of which is folvable by the following Therems:

THEOREM the First.

He ought to be accounted the publick Anthor of any Invention, who first laid down such Principles, from which that Invention is more eafily deducible, than any Proposition of Euclid's, from his Axioms, Definitions, and Postulations : And who, in laying down the fe Principles, did not busy himself in drawing in Juch Corollaries as are of infinitely less Moment and Use than the Thing it self, which is the Subject of Enquiry. But if he neither laid down fuch Principles from whence the Invention is deducible with that Ease, nor did explain the Invention it self in express Terms; but advanced many other Things of less Moment, expressly and prolixly, as flowing from his T,

bis Data: He is not to be accounted the publick Author of the Invention; which is the Subjest of Enquiry.

This Proposition is demonstrated from this, that no Philosopher or Physician know every Thing, which is deducible from Things here.

THEOREM the Second.

Whoever first publickly mentioned the Invention in the Question, and spoke of it after the same Manner as it was afterwards spoke of by others, whom all Persons allow to have known that Invention, nor did at the same time, and equally or more expressly insist on other Things which contradict that Invention, he ought to be accounted the publick Author of it: But if he mention'd no otherwise than it was mention'd by others, whom all Persons allow to have been ignorant of that Invention, and laid down other Things more frequently, and more expressly, that contradict that Invention, he ought not to be accounted Author of that Invention.

This Proposition depends upon this Affumption, That if any Author has left it in Writing in ten Places, that the Number of the Stars is odd, and but in one Place, and, speaking of the same Thing, that they are even, it is credible that it was his Opinion they were odd. Wherefore, if any Phy-

Phyfician fpeaks very obfeurely of the Circulation, and very often has expressly laid down Things not only opposite to some Effects of the Circulation, that is, to Corollaries dependant on it, but plainly repugnant to the Circulation it felf, that is, contradictory to all the Propositions upon which the Principles of Phyfick are built, it is not to be supposed that he knew the Circulation of the Blood.

7. But to fet this Matter in the clearest Light; We are to understand, that fomething is then faid to enter into the Conditions of the Questions, when the Change of that makes a Change in the Question. And therefore that is not faid to enter into them, which, if changed, or in another State, the Problem is not alter'd. To apply this then to the first Case, in which the Authority of the Inventor may be affumed to be very confiderable, it is evident that there is nothing falle to be found in the Writings of fuch an Hiftorian: But because we own our Belief from the Teftimony of many Perfons, that thefe are the Writings of that Historian, therefore we affume at the fame Time all the Propositions laid down in the third Paragraph as certain; from whence it manifeftly follows, that there is nothing contain'd in the Writings of that Hiftorian that contradicts the Sense, or its Evidences, or other Things equally certain; and if any Thing of L 2

of that Nature is found in any of his Writings, that that is not the Writing of fuch an Hiftorian, from whence the Truth of the 4th and 5th Paragraphs appear.

8. Farther, if the Authority of the Inventor does not enter into the Conditions of the Problems, then it may be look'd upon as nothing; for it contributes nothing toward the Solution of the Question, and therefore ought to be accounted as nothing. But when the Authority of the Inventor is meafur'd by his Veracity, or his conftant Inclination and Skill in speaking those Things which depend upon that Skill, it is plain in the fecond Cafe of this Question, that even his Skill and Inclination to fpeak agreeable to that Skill, are accounted as nothing, that is, they are not at all to be confider'd. From whence it follows, that the Words of an Hiftorian or Inventor may, and often ought, in this Cafe, to be fo interpreted, as to be contradictory to the Evidence of Senfe, apparently falle, and repugnant to Demonstration; as after the fame Manner fometimes Men ought to be explain'd, as of no Authority in what they fay, who themfelves will own that they and their Company often speak of Things apparently false and absurd, and interpret one another's Difcourfe in that Senfe.

From whence I conclude, when it is enquir'd, whether Hippocrates knew the Circulation

culation of the Blood, (in which Queftion the Authority of Hippocrates is reckon'd as nothing, or of no Advantage, fince no one will affirm that he knew the Circulation, because he was a Man of great Knowledge,) that we may interpret his Words with the fame Liberty as those of an ignorant Person, so as to make them false and absurd, nor ought his Authority to be appealed to in this Queftion, as having afferted Abfurdities and Contradictions to the Circulation of the Blood, nor his Words to be foftened with a more favourable Construction. I infer from hence too, that in the fecond Cafe, viz. when the Authority of the Inventor does not enter into the Conditions of the Queftion, the two Propositions in the fixth Paragraph are neceffarily true: For fince in that Cafe his Authority is nothing, an Inventor, either in Philosophy or Physic, ought not to be fupposed of fuch a Genius, as to have understood more than he has delivered in exprefs Words; from whence the first Theorem is deduced: Nor of fuch Knowledge, as that he could not lay down falle and abfurd Propositions, and often did; from whence the fecond Theorem is derived.

For the more eafy Comprehension of what has been advanced, I would have it remark'd in what Manner it may be applied to the Solution of the Question of the Inventor of the Circulation of the Blood. The Question L 3 turns

turns upon this, to difcover whether Hippocrates knew the Circulation of the Blood. But it ought to be made evident, that the Term Circulation was used by Hippocrates in the fame Senfe, as it hath been by many of much a later Date, fo as to difcover a clear and diftin Defcription of the Circulation in Hippocrates.

But I affirm, that the Circulation is never expresly described by Hippocrates, and that there is no Paffage in his Writings which can incline one to believe that that Motion was understood by him, but only that there was a Poffibility that it might be fo; for tho' he no where mentions a continual Circulation of the Blood, yet he often mentions fuch Things from whence the Circulation may be deduced, which however he never does deduce from thence, altho' it is an Invention of a much greater Confequence, than all those Things which he has inferred and tedioufly inculcated from Principles which he did know. For Inftance, Venefection was known by Hippocrates; the perpetual Circulation of the Blood is deducible from that Operation; yet he does not difcover this Circulation from thence, but runs on with a naufeous Loquacity in advancing Abundance of other Matters, fome of which are meer Trifles, fome abfurd and destructive of the Circulation, and all of them of no Confequence at all. Let they who

who are too great Admirers of him, read his Books, Of the Parts in Man, Of the Morbus Sacer, Of the Regimen of Diet, and then they will plainly fee how much he extols himfelf, when he relates Inventions of his own, which are in the leaft Degree comparable to that of the perpetual Circulation of the Blood. Indeed it is not to be believed, but that Hippocrates, a Native of Greece, and one who fo often treats his Reader with trite Subjects, would have profecuted the Circulation in a pompous oratorical Manner, if he had known it; fince that, for its Ufefulnefs and Glory, far exceeds all the Inventions of Hippocrates, and all the Descendants from Æsculapius. Hippocrates knew the Pulfation of the Arteries, and he ought to have collected the perpetual Circulation of the Blood from thence; but he collects no fuch Thing: But when he was to defcribe the Caufe of the Pulfe, he laid down a Propofition contradictory to the Circulation; which he had not done, if he had at all understood the true Caufe of the Pulse, viz. the Circulation of the Blood. And what Caufe do you imagine that Divine Old Man dreamt to be the Reason of the perpetual Pulsation between the Ears and the Temples? I do not speak of the Increase of the Pulse upon Fevers, and the Pain of the Head, which is not perpetual, and which Hippocrates has treated of in his Book of Vapours: For he gives L4

gives us the Caufe of a perpetual Pulfation in his Book of the Parts in Man; which is this, There is Blood contained in all the Veins of the Body, excepting in the Veins which have a continual Pulfe between the Ears and Temples; for there is no Blood in them: Becaufe the Blood which is neareft to them, endeavours to retreat from them, and being turned into a contrary Channel, meets the oppofite Blood, with which it contends, and from that Contention arifes the Pulfe.

Let it be obferved in the next Place, that *Hippocrates* never fpoke otherwife concerning the Motion of the Blood, than others have fince fpoke, who it is plain did not acknowledge the perpetual Circulation, and fome of whom even denied it after it had been proved and demonftrated by Dr. *Harvey*. Let any one who is pleafed to take that Pains, read over the Phyficians of a longer Date than Dr. *Harvey*, and fome of his Contemporaries, and he will certainly find the Truth of my Affertion; for I am not at leifure to recite their Opinions. Since thefe Things are fo, we may conclude that the true Circulation of the Blood was unknown to *Hippocrates*.

Hippocrates knew the Structure of the Heart and its Motion, and writ a Treatife upon that Subject, and Harvey and other Moderns have writ upon the fame, and I wifh those who affert that the former knew the Circulation, would read attentive-

ly.

ly their Writings upon the Heart. In Hippocrates's Book of the Heart, there is not a Word of the perpetual Circulation, but many directly opposite to that Motion of the Blood: For after he has declaimed in his Manner, in abundance of Words, upon the Liquor of the Pericardium, of the Reafon why the Water falling down upon the Larynx should provoke a Cough, he takes a deal of Pains to prove that the Auricles of the Heart are not the Organs of Hearing, because fays he, they have not the Bores of the Ears, nor can hear the greatest Noife. Hippocrates was certainly profuse enough of Words, and therefore it is not to be imagined, but that he who defcended to the Explication of fo many infignificant Trifles in abundance of Words, would have fpoke of the Circulation of the Blood according to the Dignity of the Subject, but that he did not understand it. But farther, when he had the fairest Occasion of giving a full and elegant Description of this Circulation, he only informs us, that the Mind of Man is placed in the left Ventricle of the Heart; but he every where affirms, that the Blood is put into Motion by the Soul, and drove thro' what we term the Veins toward the extreme Parts of the Body, and that it is forced back again thro' the fame by the uncertain Motion of the fame Soul; and when that ceases to act, the Blood is at reft : For I think

I think this a proper Remark, that Hippocrates often gives a prolix Account of Things, which are fo manifeftly contrary to the Circulation of the Blood, that he must necessarily be ignorant of it, when he wrote those Things. It is indeed poffible that one of a moderate Skill in the Elements of Geometry, may advance a Proposition deduced by a tedious Train of Confequences, which may perhaps be found repugnant to some Principles of that Science; but it is impossible that one who understands those Elements, should often advance fuch Things as are plainly opposite to all the Propositions of that Science. Wherefore fince Hippocrates has frequently and in express Words delivered Things not only obscurely contrary to the Circulation of the Blood, or to fome Corollaries dependant upon it, but apparently repugnant to it, that is, Things evidently contradictory to all the Propositions of Physic, it is not to be imagined that he understood the Circulation of the Blood. I defire those who read Hippocrates fo curioufly, to find fomething which feems to fhew the Circulation of the Blood, to extract and remark upon those Passages which discover the direct contrary; for they will find a prodigious Number of those; and I do affure them, that this would be a Task of much lefs Difficulty than that which they are upon, and yet would not prove of less Advantage.

9. We

9. We must therefore add to what has been faid, that it is not fimply enquired in this Place, whether Hippocrates knew the true Circulation of the Blood, but whether that Motion of the Blood is fo confirmed and described by him, that others by the Inducement of his Reafoning, and not merely by his Authority (which ought to have no place among Phyficians) could and ought eafily to have allowed the true Circulation, or, farther, that they did, or profeffed that they allowed it; because the Question is, whether Hippocrates was the Author of the Doctrine of the Circulation, that is, whether he inclined others to believe the Truth of it. It is known, that the Geometricians, who have demonstrated any Theorem not expresly demonstrated by Euclid, or any other Geometrician, altho' it naturally flows from Theorems demonstrated by others, are accounted the Authors of that Theorem; and that they acquire the greater Reputation, the easier the Method appears, which they made use of in deducing their Theorem from others before known and demonstrated. And it is well known too, that the Geometricians never enquire whether fuch a Theorem was known to another, or accounted as true, (for that does not promote Geometry, and I may fay Phyfic, where the Cafe turns upon Reafon and Demonstration, not upon Authority,) but they enquire whether it was therefore demon-

demonstrated by another. There is no one who will allow a Geometrician to be the Author of a Theorem, which he has not demonftrated, or will think himfelf the lefs obliged to him who did first demonstrate it, because another Person took upon Trust, or founded upon Conjecture, a Truth which was geometrically demonstrable. In the fame Manner, the Learned ought not to enquire with too great a Concern, whether Hippocrates has not afferted fome Things, which we, who have drawn our Knowledge of the Circulation from others, may think lead that Way, altho' even that is false; but whether Hippocrates ever brought any one Proof of that Principle, by which others will own that they were induced to give Credit to the Circulation, which they were before ignorant of; but there never was any one who would profess that. For as for what fome affert now-a-days, after the whole Subject has been demonstrated, that Hippocrates has clearly laid down the Structure and Use of the Valves of the Heart, that is nothing to the Purpofe: For how many have there been, who have explain'd their Structure and Use better than Hippocrates ? even all the Anatomists and Physicians fince the Time of Hippocrates; who, however, were fo ignorant of the true Circulation of the Blood, that fome of them who knew Columbus, Cafalpinus, Servetus, and others, and had

had read their Books, yet writ against that Doctrine of theirs. I conclude in the laft Place, that Hippocrates did not know the true Use of the Valves of the Heart. This is evident from his Book upon the Heart, wherein the following Passage of the Right Ventricle, and its Vessel, appears: It opens indeed into the Lungs, to give a Passage to the Blood thither for their Support; but it closes toward the Heart, the' not very strictly, for to allow an Entrance to the Air, tho' not in a great Quantity. From whence it is plain, that Hippocrates's Use of the Valves was, that fo much Blood which was not to return might pass out of them, as was fufficient for the Nutriment of the Lungs, while the Air entred thro' the fame Passages out of the Lungs; all which is entirely foreign and repugnant to the true Circulation of the Blood, and the true Account of Respiration.

10. It is not now worth our while to remark upon all those Paffages, which shew that *Hippocrates* entertained a Notion directly contrary to the Circulation of the Blood, as explained by the Moderns: Give me leave to felect a few Places out of abundance that might be mentioned. *Hippocrates* in explaining the Causes of Madness, after his Manner, in his Book *De Morbo Sacro*, has these Words towards the Conclusion:

Now if the attendant Symptoms of this Diftemper are Eears and Apprehensious of Evil, then
then it arises from an Alteration in the Brain which happens upon the Increase of Heat i the Brain from the Bile, where it is carrie with a great Force from the Body into the Brain thro' the Veins which convey the Blood. Bu these Fears continue till it returns again int the Veins and Body, and then they vanifi-But the Patient feels a Sudden Anxiety and Dejection as the Brain grows cool, and in compressed extraordinarily; but that happens from the Phlegm, and that Affection causes « Forgetfulness in the Patient : But when the Brain grows warm on a sudden, he cries out and makes a Noife in the Night; and that Symptom happens to the Bilious, and not to the Phlegmatic, since they do not grow warm upon a copious Effusion of the Blood into the Brain and its fermenting there. But the Blood is. conveyed often through the aforefaid Veins when it happens that the Patient Sees a terrible Division, and is in as certain Fears as it he were awake; then his Face glows with Rednefs, and his Eyes grow red, and he designs some Mischief in his Mind; and so it happens too in his Sleep: But when he awakes, and comes to his perfect Senfes, and the Blood is again dispersed in the afore faid. Veins, then the Symptoms cease.

From which Paffage I think it is evident, that *Hippocrates* thought that the Blood return'd from the Brain thro' the fame Veins by which it was conveyed thither, and that

it

it fluctuated in the fame Veffels backwards and forwards; which Motion he believing to be perform'd at a ftated Diftance of Time in the fame Perfon, called those oxillatory Motions Periods.

11. And from hence it is manifest, how weak that Argument is in Favour of Hippocrates, which is drawn of his Book of Dreams, where this Passage occurs: Rivers in an unusual State denote the Period of the Blood; their extraordinary Flows its Exuberance, and their Decrease its Defect; but we should increase the latter, and diminish the former by a Course of Diet.

There never was any Phyfician, who, tho" an Adversary to the true Circulation, did not attribute fome Motion to the Blood, but always thro' the fame Veffels, after the Manner of the Euripus; wherefore they may, and ufually do affirm the fame as Hippocrates here does : For his Words allow a Motion to the Blood, but not a circular one ; fince Rivers do not return in a Circle to their Fountains, as it is now determined that the Blood does thro' continual contiguous Canals : And it is Matter of Admiration, that fo many learned Men observing that Hippocrates every where afcribed a Period to the Motion of the Blood, should believe that Hippocrates knew and expressed by that Word the true Circulation of the Blood ; whereas that Word, in his Meaning, fignifies only

only (as it often does among the Philosophers and Geometricians) a Fluctuation in the fame Veffels, at ftated Times, (as the Place here makes it evident,) now into these Parts, and then into contrary ones, which Fluctuation is sometimes performed with a greater Quantity of Blood, and quicker, and at others with a lefs, and more flowly. But this will appear from another Passage of his Writings.

12. Now a little beyond the Middle of his Book upon the Food, he fpeaks thus: The Root of the Veins is the Liver, the Root of the Arteries is the Heart: The Blood and Spirits move and are dispersed from these over the whole, and the Heat is dispersed with them. Which Place, if we compare it with that of his Book upon the Heart, where fpeaking of the Ventricles of the Heart he fays, These are the Fountains of human Nature; from hence run the Streams by which the whole Channel of the Body is irrigated. Which makes it plain, that Hippocrates believ'd the Motion of a Fluid toward the extreme Parts of the Body, returning thro' the fame Veffels, to be performed in the fame Manner from the Liver, as from the Heart. That this was Hippocrates's Meaning, is evident from his Book of the Places in Men, where not far from the Beginning he has these Words: There are two Veins which lie near the Tem-

ples, between the Temples and the Ears, which reach

reach to the Eyes, and have a continual Pulse. For these only, of all the Veins, have the least Moisture, the Blood being turned away from 'em: But the averted Blood has a contrary Motion to that which flows in , and that which is averted has a Tendency to retire; but that which flows in from the Parts above having a Tendency to proceed lower, they meet here, and working upon each other in a Circle, produce a Pulse in the Veins. By which Words he means no more than that the Pulse is produced by the Motion of the Blood thro' the fame Canal, from each Extremity of the Canal. And this is the Reafon of the Hippocratical Circulation of the Blood in a Perfon in a State of Health; for in Fevers he affigns another Caufe equally abfurd, and repugnant to the true Circulation, in his Book of Vapours, where he makes the Air and the Blood pafs thro' the fame Veffel into contrary Parts: Which abundantly proves, that he who has not produced his Belief of the true Circulation in any Place of his Writings, nor produced one Argument for it, was intirely ignorant of the Manner of that Motion.

13. Altho' I am weary of writing fo much on this Subject, yet I ought not to omit anfwering a certain eminent Writer, who produces these Words from Hippocrates's Book of the Regimen of Diet in Acute Distempers, A Quinsse bappens, when a large and glutinous Defluxion, either in the Winter or Sum-M mer,

mer, falls into the Jugular Veins, and those Veins have attracted a more copious Flow of Matter, by an Increase of the Amplitude of their Vessels. First, all this is false, and repugnant to the true Circulation. Again, her himself very justly owns, that the Arteries. may be as well meant in this Place, as those which we call the Veins. But we allow that they are what we call now the Jugular Veins, it only follows from hence, that the Blood moves in its Vessels fometimes faster, and at: others more flowly: But there is not a Word here of its true and circular Motion. But that Learned Perfon, in part of his Writings, prejudges the Queftion in these Words; If you will allow me that the Blood moves, I will easily prove that it circulates too. But the Queftion is not whether the Blood circulates, but whether Hippocrates knew that it did; nor ought we to infer, that becaufe it might have been found and difcovered by what Hippocrates did know, that therefore it was discover'd by Hippocrates; fince every Barber knew the Neceffity of a Ligature in Venesection, which, however, did not give an Opportunity to the most acute Physicians, but within a few Ages, of difcovering the Circulation, tho' it might have been difcover'd more eafily from thence than any Thing befides, and much more eafy than from the Words of Hippocrates, even those which are supposed to contain it in the plainest Terms. 14. But

14. But we must examine a Passage of Hippocrates, in his Book De Morbo Sacro, where he has these Words: A great Number of Veins, and those very Minute, proceed from all Parts of the Body to the Brain; but there are two large ones, one rising from the Liver, the other from the Spleen. Now that which is derived from the Liver, runs in this Manner: One Part of the Vein is carried to the Right Hand, near the Kidney and the Loins, and downwards to the internal Part of the Thigh, and reaches to the Foot, and is called the Vena Cava. But the other Part Aretches thro' the Veins on the Right, and the Lungs upwards, and is divided into the Heart and the Arm: But its other Part stretches thro' the Throat, on the Right Side of the Neck upwards into the Skin it felf, where it is conspicuous to the Eye; but it is concealed near the Ear, and there it divides, and its largest, thickest, and widest Part ends in the Brain : But in the other Part, where the Vein is lefs, part is carried to the Right Ear, part to the Eye, and part to the Nofe: And this is the Course of the Vein from the Liver. But the Vein from the Spleen runs to the Left upwards and downwards, as that from the Liver, but leffer and weaker. Now we draw in a great Quantity of Air thro' these Veins: For these are the Vents of the Body, as drawing the Air to them, and deriving it to the rest of the Body, and cooling it in the Veins, and then emitting it again. M 2 From

From whence it is plain, that what we call the Veins now attracted and emitted the Air in *Hippocrates*'s Opinion, that is, emitted thro' the fame Vents by which they attracted it. From whence it follows, that he who did not use an express Demonstration to inculcate the Belief of the Circulation of the Blood, ought to be esteemed ignorant of it, if he produced such Principles as we have heard *Hippocrates* advance; they being evidently to the Circulation, as we at present understand it.

Thefe Words follow foon after, in the fame Book, which deferve our Notice. Now the Defluxion is greater toward the Right than the Left, becaufe the Veins are larger, and more in Number there than on the Left, as firetching from the Liver and the Spleen. From whence it is plain, that Hippocrates believed and delivered it as his Doctrine, that the Blood and Phlegm (which he makes to flow into all Parts) flowed thro' the Veins from the Liver and Spleen into all Parts of the Body, which is entirely contrary to our Circulation, and fhews that he was ignorant of it.

15. But it appears more clearly what was Hippocrates's Opinion in this Point, from his 4th Book of Difeafes. At the Beginning of that Book, he fays, The Stomach, when full, is the Fountain of all Juices in the Body, but when empty it drains from the decaying Body. But

But there are four other Fountains, each of which empties into the Body, (that is, the Bile, the Blood, the Water, and the Phlegm, of which he was then speaking.) After then these Fountains have received their Proportions from the Stomach, and they are again emptied, they drain from the Body. It is certain the Heart is the Fountain of the Blood, the Head of the Phlegm, the Spleen of the Water, and the Situation of the Bile is in the Liver. Again, he farther adds in the fame Book, But those Parts which I have termed Fountains, when they are full, always tranfmit into the Body; but when they are empty, they are encompassed and drain'd by that on all Sides : And the Cafe is the fame with the Stomach; for the Cafe is refembled by this In-Stance; If any one pours Water into three or more Vessels, and places them on a plane Surface, and at the same time disposes it so that there is a Communication between them by Pipes; and then pours the Water gradually into one of the Veffels till they are all filled; for the Water will flow from one Veffel to the reft, till the reft are filled. But, when the Veffels are full, if any one draws the Water out of one, the Water will in its Turn flow back (you fee that it will flow back thro' the fame Pipe that conveyed it) into the Veffel, (that is, into the Veffel from whence the Water is drawn;) and the Water will be refunded from the Veffels M_3 278

in the same Manner as they received it. Thus, without Question, the Case is in the Body.

And now, I think, it is plain enough, that Hippocrates knew nothing of the true Circulation, fince we may be abundantly convinc'd from this Paffage alone, that, in his Opinion, the Blood and Juices irrigating the Body, flow backward and forward through the fame Canals, like Water from one Veffel to another, reciprocally flowing from that to the first, thro' the fame Pipe. However, we take Leave to add the Authority of Ariftotle in this Point, if that can influence any one. He, in the 4th Chapter of his Third Book of Animals, fays, The Blood is derived from the Heart to the Veins; but the Blood does not arrive at the Heart from any other Part; for that is the Original and Fountain of the Blood, and its first Receptacle. It is plain, that Aristotle argues here against those who believed the Blood returned back to the Heart thro' the fame Canals. So that if we have any Regard to Aristotle, the Opinion of Hippocrates is, that the Blood flowed and returned thro' the fame Veffel, as Water would do if put in Motion within a Canal clofed up on all Sides, and at each End, which, in Ariflotle's Opinion, who allows, with Hippocrates, that the Heart is the Fountain of the Blood, is impossible; becaufe Streams do not flow back to their Fountains. But that we may not believe that Aristotle thought that the Blood, which does

does not return towards the Heart the fame Way it paffed, any more than Streams can return the fame Way to their Fountains, did return back another Way, that is, from the Arteries into the Veins. Read only what he fays in the 5th Chapter of his Third Book of the Parts of Animals. The Veins proceed from larger into lefs, till they become fo narrow, as not to be capable of conveying the Blood. And, indeed, if Ariftotle was as ignorant of the Circulation, as thefe Words of his prove he was, it is not credible that Hippocrates knew it, or that Ariftotle difcovered any Traces of it in his Writings.



M 4

A DIS-



DISSERTATION

UPON THE

Circulation of the Blood

IN

Born Animals and Embryons.



R. Harvey, after others, has explained and demonstrated the Circulation of the Blood, which Phy-

ficians imagined peculiar to born Animals. Any one who is but the leaft converfant in that Art, will own that Phyfick receives great Improvement from that Demonftration; but nothing is more ferviceable in Life, nor can I imagine any Difcovery to be more grateful to a Mind that is fearching after the ultimate Caufe of Things, that Caufe which is known to God only, the Author of all Things, than to have difcovered and acknowledged that the Original of Animals ought to be derived from God himfelf. Becaufe it is now known, that the Blood is alternately received into, and

and expelled out of the Heart of the Animal; wherefore, neither any Heat, or Ferment, nor a Fluid, however impregnated with Salts and Spirits, nor any other Force continually and not alternately impressed, expels the Blood, or nutritive Fluid, out of the Heart, or Region of the Heart: For if fo, the expelled Blood would not return to the Heart, as being obstructed by that Motion acting perpetually, and not alternately. But that Force alternately exerted in the Heart does not proceed from the Womb of the Mother; for what proceeds from the Womb to the Heart of the Embryon, falls down into the Cavity of its Ventricles, and not into the Ducts of its Fibres, where the Power of Contraction confifts: Befides, that the Heart of an Embryon, when freed from the Womb, is contracted, and the Blood circulates. That Power then is to be derived from fome Part of the Embryon. Now the Law of Circulation proves that nothing is returned from any Part of the Animal to the Heart, which was not before conveyed with the Blood from the Heart to that Part; and I have my felf shewn, that the Secretion of Fluids in an Animal (either returning or unreturning Fluids) is performed by the Neceffity of Circulation, which objects the Particles of the Liquid to be fecreted equal to the Size of the Orifice of the Secretory, and that there is no other Mechanical Account of

of Secretion: And therefore that there are not only fecretory Veffels and others existent, before any affigned Secretion, but also that the Secretion of the Powers refunded for the Contraction of the Heart is performed before any affigned Constriction of the Heart, or before any Circulation is commenced; or that the Contraction of the Heart, which expels the Blood to the Part which fecerns the Body, or Powers for the Contraction of the Heart is performed before any Secretion, or Refusion, and Communication of the contractile Powers. Again, the Circulation shews us, that the Marrow of the Brain, or Spina Dorsi, is that Part from whence the Force that expels Blood alternately, is impreffed upon the Heart: Nor is there by any Changes and Metamorphofes common to fome Sorts of Animals, any Alteration made in those Powers, and their Relations, by which Life and Circulation does fubfift in those Creatures; and by confequence the Commuication between the Heart and the Marrow of the Spina is not changed. From whence it follows, that the Heart and the medullary Substance have always a mutual Relation to each other by the fame Powers, and operating in the fame Manner, and that this Relation exifted in the fame Manner at the first Contraction of the Heart, as it does in a fucceeding one. Wherefore the Powers of the Heart and medullary Substance had the fame Beginning' and

in Born Animals, &c. 171

and act together; and by confequence no Animal is ever produced mechanically. And from hence I draw this Confequence, that the Fluid derived from the Male brings with it an Animal into the Womb and Ovaria of the Female, which before enjoyed the Circulation of the Blood, and the Benefit of Life. And I know not whether they who ftile themfelves *Theologians* and Interpreters of *Jove*, ever produced any Thing more worthy of *Jove*, or more glorious to Mankind-

1. But proceed we to other Matters, and explain fome Qualities of the Circular Motion proper to the Blood, demonstrated by Dr. Harvey. Now we may collect them from what follows:

If a Fluid in which fome folid Corpufcles fwim, flows thro' Canals, whofe Sides converge to the Parts of Motion to which the Fluid it felf moves, or diverge from them, or if the Sides are parallel to the Line of Motion, the Motion of the Fluid is more eafily and frequently obstructed in the Canal, whofe Sides converge to the Parts of Motion, than in a Vessel of parallel Sides; and the fame Motion is more eafily obstructed in a Canal of parallel Sides, than in one whole Sides diverge from the Parts of Motion. And farther, the larger the Angle of the Vertex of the Triangle thro' the Axis of the Canal in these converging Sides, is, the more eafily and frequently is the Motion directed

directed toward the Vertex obstructed; but the lesser that Angle is, the more easily and frequently is the Motion of the Fluid toward the Parts declining from the Vertex obstructed.

2. It is evident, if the Motion is from the Basis to the Vertex, v.g. of a truncated Cone, it may eafily happen (if any folid Corpufcles fwim in the Fluid) that the Fluid may carry a Solid, which may close up the narrower Orifice of the truncated Cone: Befide, by the Position of Solids fwimming in a Fluid, and their continual Alteration by ftriking against the Sides of the Canal, it is hardly to be prevented, but that fome of those Bodies being at last conveyed into a Section of the Vessel fufficiently narrow, may mutually strike upon each other, and, being supported by the Sides concurring with the Line of Motion, compose a solid Arch, which will obstruct all Passage. And it is evident that this Arch will be the firmer, as it is more forcibly preffed by the fucceeding Fluid. And in the last Place it is plain, that this will happen more easily and frequently, cæteris paribus, the more the Sides of the Cone converge, that is, the larger the Angle of the Vertex of the Triangle is thro' the Axis of the conical Canal.

3. If the Sides of the Canal are parallel, and fo the Canal it felf either cylindrical or prifmatical, Sc. it is evident, that the first Caufe

in Born Animals, Fc. 173

Caufe of Obstruction vanishes, fince there is no Body which can enter such a Canal, which cannot pass thro' the Parts of it with the fame Facility; but the other Caufe arising from the casual striking of the Solids at Sections always the lesser towards the Parts of Motion, happens but feldom, nor will that give any Obstruction, fince its Force ought to be increased by the Force of the subfequent Fluid. This is also a Confequence from what has been before laid down, fince a Cylinder is a Cone, of whose Triangle thro' the Axis the Angle at the Vertex is the least of all.

4. But when the Motion is in a Canal, v. g. which is conical from the Vertex to the Bafis, or thro' a Canal whofe Sides diverge from the Parts of Motion, no Accident arifing from these Reasons obstructing and stopping the Motion, takes place; fince a folid Corpufcle which enters the narrower Orifice of the Vertex, may very eafily pafs thro' the large Sections of the Canal, and the Corpufcles cannot be fo eafily forced to ftrike against each other, from the concurring Refiftances of the Sides; and if they accidentally should compose an Arch, that being unfupported by the Sides of the Canal, would be eafily carried away by the Force of the fubsequent Fluid.

5. From whence it follows, that in the fmalleft Veins, and at their first Rife (in which, from their

their small Difference of their Distance from the Heart, the Velocity of the Blood is equal, as in the nearest Arteries,) Obstructions do not happen fo eafily and commonly as in the Evanescence of the Arteries; and that the Motion of a Fluid is more eafily obstructed in the Arteries, than in the Nerves. For the Difference of the Velocities in the Arteries and Veins may be diminished to such a Degree, as to become leffer than any given Quantity; and therefore the Velocity at the Evanescence of an Artery, and the Rife of a Vein, is equal. But the Difference of the Refiftances and Obstructions happening within the Arteries and Veins, is not altered, tho' you affume the Sections ever fo near their common Vertex, fince the Angle comprehended between the Side and Axis of the Cone, remains the fame always, and in every Part.

From whence it follows, that in every Diftemper, the Symptoms, which may as well arife from an Obstruction of the Motion of the Fluid in the Arteries, as from a Stoppage of the Motion of the Fluid thro' the Veins and Nerves, it is always to be fupposed, that the Fault is in the Arteries, rather than in the Veins and Nerves.

6. Now

in Born Animals, &c. 175

6. Now we think fit to give an Instance of this in the foporiferous Affections of the Brain, viz. a complete Apoplexy, a Carus, Coma, Lethargy, and Palfy, which laft, tho' not an Affection of the Brain, yet has a near Relation to an Apoplexy. They who have wrote upon these Distempers, have not fcrupled to transfer the Caufe of thefe Symptoms, which lies within the Veffels, into the Nerves, or, as Dr. Willis speaks, into the Pores of the Brain: Whereas the Place of its Situation and Action is always within the Arteries, according to what we here prove. The famous Sylvins, in his 2d Book of the Practice of Phylick, discoursing upon the Apoplexy, has this Passage: I am fully per-Swaded, that the Animal Spirits may be made Jo beavy and devoid of Motion, that an Apoplexy may follow; since it is evident, from Experience, that Men, upon the taking a Quantity of Opiates, or Spirits of Wine, have fell into a Sleep and an Apoplexy. The fame Person, upon the Palfy, fays thus: It arises from a Fault of the Animal Spirits, as often as they are made heavy and motionless by Opiates, or a Dizziness. And speaking of a Carus, and a fleepy Coma, The Caufe of these Symptoms, fays he, is from an Induction of a Narcotick Power upon the Animal Spirits, which deprives them of their Motion. And, laftly, the fame Perfon, after a verbofe Difquifition about the Nature of Opiates, concludes, In

in the 26th Chapter of the fame Book, That the Narcotick Power of Opium is join'd to its sulphurous, that is, its oily Part, which renders the Animal Spirits sluggish, inactive, and more unfit for Motion.

What Dr. Willis has faid upon these Diftempers, amounts to the fame Thing. For he affirms, that they arife from the Admission of a venomous Substance into the Brain, which either intirely extinguishes the Spirits, or forces them to retreat to the inner Parts. In his Chapter of a Lethargy, he fays thus: Opiates subdue the exterior Power of the Spirits, so that the rest being diminished and chased into the inner Parts, are oppressed and destroy'd. And becaufe the Nature of this Diftemper cannot be explained, without accounting for the Caufe of Sleep, it is worth while to hear what he fays upon that Point in the 16th Chapter of the Phyfiological Part of his Book, Of the Soul of Brutes. The Animal Spirits, fayshe, are the Subject of the Brain, out of the Cerebellum, otherwise the Pulle and Re-Spiration would cease in the Time of Sleep. Since the Nerves that move the Heart and Breaft, according to Willis, proceed from the Cerebellum. Thus the exterior Animal Spirits of the Brain, either by a voluntary Motion, (to this Cafe he refers the Powers arifing from Musick, and Lassitude after Exercise, in which Cafes he fays the Spirits contract themfelves into a leffer Space,) or by the In. curfion

in Born Animals, De.

curfion of a foreign Body (to this he refers the Extinction of the Spirits by Opiates) withdrawing themfelves from the exterior Pores of the Brain, where they ufually expatiate, retreat into its innermost Cavities, where they repose, as it were, at Leisure, and induce an equal Lassitude upon the Spirits refiding there, and restrain the Efflux of others, which would flow into the Nerves, and draw them into the fame Repose.

7. All this fhews, that Sylvius and Willis believed that the Nature of these Symptoms of Opium, and the Cause of Sleep, could not be explained by any other Means, than by the introducing an obstructing Body into the Nerves, that should hinder the Motion of the Fluid that passes through them. But we here shew that there is no such Thing; and by consequence, that a Cause answerable to all medicinal Uses, ought to be derived from a Body dispersed through the extreme minutest Arteries of the Brain.

8. It feems ftrange that these Perfons fhould receive no Light from the reading of a Book published by the Learned John-Jacob Vepser, upon the Apoplexy. For he, in the 252d, 251st, and 250th Pages, and in many other Places, fays, The Head is dozed by Opium, by a plain Experiment, which is the notable Quality of Fermenting in Opium, or its converting into Vapours, (by which it turns the Serum into Vapours,) and many of these Va-N

pours infinuate themselves into the Passages of the Animal Spirits or Nerves, and in some measure obstruct them; for Opium operates by stuffing the Passages of the Nerves to that Degree, as to deny a Passage to the Spirits; which is more probable than the fancied Fixation of some Animal Spirits by the hot and sudorific Qualities of Opium. So far this great Man, who deferves much of the Protestion of Physick.

9. It is plain that Vepfer was miftaken in placing the Operation of Opium in the Nerves, and not rather making it in the Veins. For there the Blood being in a quicker Motion, and warmer, is more eafily turned into Vapours; and when it is converted into Vapours, it will neceffarily diftend the Arteries, and prefs round the Canals of the Nerves, and make its own Paffage into them more difficult. But this is plain from what we have before demonftrated.

That very Industrious and Learned Phyfician Etmiller, would have done well in attending Vepfær's Observations on this Subject: For Etmuller, in a Disputation upon the Diaphoretick Power of Opium, published in the Year 1679, fays, that Opium induces a certain Lassitude and Heaviness upon the Animal Spirits, and from them a Languor and Inactivity in moving the Fibres of the Organical Parts; for if we depend upon Etmuller's Philosophy, it restrains the Elassick Force of the Spirits. He

in Born Animals, &c. 179

He afterwards affirms, that there is no Alteration made in the Blood by Opium, fince two Grains of Opium do not feem fufficient to alter 20 Pound of Blood, and work upon fo great a Quantity to that Degree, as to retolve the Animal into a Sweat. He allows indeed that 20 Grains of volatile Salt will provoke a Sweat; but then he advertifes, that those 20 Grains feem better to answer the Quantity of 20 Pound, than the two Grains of Opium.

10. It is eafy to obferve that we have anfwered these Notions in the 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th Paragraphs of this Differtation: But because I see many unwary Persons every Day drawn into Mistakes by *Etmuller*, it will not perhaps be unacceptable to fift his Doctrine with some farther Accuracy. For he ought to know the Manner how *Opium* exerts its Powers, who pretends to give a Solution of the soporiferous Affections of the Brain.

It is plain, from these Passages of Etmuller, how difficult it is for one to difentangle himself from Prejudices: For while he denies that the Blood is at all altered by Opium, because the Alteration, which resolves the Animal into Sweat, requires at least 20 Grains of volatile Salt of Hartshorn; but 2 Grains of Opium (more than which he thinks it unsafe to give) is very disproportionate to that Quantity; he does not at the N 2 fame

fame Time take Notice, that 20 Grains of volatile Salt are far more difproportionate to an Ounce of Wine, if an Ounce of Wine will excite Sweat, or at leaft from that Quantity of Wine which provokes Sweat in the Generality of People. It is fufficient, if the Force of Opium is to the Force of volatile Sudorific Salt as 20 to 2, and to the Force of Wine as 480 to 2, if 480 Grains of Wine provoke Sweat.

11. But he does not at all explain what the Powers and Qualities of Opium are, nor does he inform us of any Thing more than that the taking of Opium brings a Heavinefs upon the Animal Spirits, following the Exprefions of Sylvius and Willis, (which Vepfar had clearly refuted,) affirming that Opium acting not within the Arteries, but the Nerves, was the Caufe of that Heavinefs; which is refuted by my Theorem.

I shall then dismiss this Subject, after obferving that the famous *Etmuller* is evidently mistaken, in affirming that *Hectical* Perfons are freed from Night-Sweats by the administring of Opium. Here he has deceived himself; for Opium is proper for the quieting a Cough, which increases Sweat by an immoderate Agitation of the Body; and if Opium is mixed with *Potter's Antihectic* Powder, Salt of *Saturn*, and, as the best Physicians practife, with the *Jesuits Bark*, it diministric the Cough and the Sweats which that

in Born Animals, &c. that excites. But if Opium be given fimply to Hectical Perfons who have no Cough, it always excites Sweats. Thus much I have observed for the Use of young Physicians.

12. What I have deduced in the fifth Place, proves, that the Caufe of those Affections that provoke a kind of Sleep, exerts its Powers within the Arteries. I speak of that Caufe, which being fituated within the Veffels, produces those Affections. Neither do I here difcourse of the Causes that coagulate the Blood, from whence we derive those Affections fometimes; for these ought to be placed within the Arteries, as the Thing it felf proves, and we have observed.

For whatever can coagulate the Animal Spirits, that will first coagulate the Blood, and fo will not enter the Nerves; becaufe we difpute of the Caufe of those Affections which refemble a Carus, flowing or confifting in the Veffels.

These Things being settled, we may now proceed to explain those Narcotic Powers, which fo many Phyficians would have to be the Canfe of the foporiferous Affections of the Brain.

13. The Phanomena or Symptoms mentioned, prove that the Sweat is provoked by the taking of Opium, the Blood being rarified, and caufing an unufual Diftention of the Arteries, as the Pulfe plainly informs us; wherefore if fuch a Quantity of Opium N_3 IS

is taken, as if able to rarify the Blood in the Brain to that Degree, that the fmall Arteries fituated between the Nerves fhall contract them extraordinarily, and deny a Paffage to the Fluid inherent in the Nerves, the Animal will be thought to fleep, and all those Accidents will happen which accompany foporiferous Affections derived from a Caufe flowing thro' the Veffels of the Brain.

The Heart will be contracted, and also the Muscles which ferve alternately for Infpiration, because both these Muscles and the Heart have no Antagonists; and therefore a less Quantity of Liquor will fuffice to contract them: But if the Force of Compreffion be every where increas'd, by increafing the Quantity of the Opium that is taken, the Nerves at the Heart will also be too much compress'd, which will make the Pulse beat little and feldom, and at last be quite gone. Which Thing not being obferv'd by Dr. Willis, made him abfurdly, and contrary both to the Senfe of Anatomifts, and the Doctrine of the Circulation of the Blood, affirm, that the Nerves which ferve for involuntary Motion, viz. the Motion of the Heart and the Thorax, are not affected by a Body which is faid to deftroy what is in the Nerves of the Brain, altho' carried thro' the Arteries, which are all about the Cerebrum and the Cerebellum. Now if this was true, the remaining Part of the Opium that is taken must be carried off by all

in Boru Animals, Sc. 183

all the Arteries which tend to the Brain, and compress all the fecreting Veffels that lie about the fanguiferous Veffels, which are dilated by the Rarefaction of the Liquid that runs thro' the fmall Arteries. Therefore the Veffels which make a Secretion of the Gall and Pancreatic Juice are compress'd, and fo (if the Morbific Matter of a Diarrhaa is fecern'd thro' the Secretory, Pancreatic, and Biliary Ducts) a Diarrhaa will be thereby fupprefs'd, the Canals of the Kidneys will be compress'd, and the Animal will not be able to pifs. The Perspiration thro' the Skin and Membranes will alone exert it felf, the fudoriferous Pores which are in the Ends of the Veffels and in the Skin, not being ftopp'd or hinder'd from acting, by the Dilatation of the fmall Arteries or other Veffels compreffing them more than ordinary. The Force of this Reasoning lies in this, that how much foever the Perspiration is increas'd, it has no Oceasion for particular secreting Vessels, but throws it felf out of the Pores of any Veffels, as well as fecreting ones.

14. Whence it will be no difficult Matter to explain the foporiferous, anodyne, and aftringent Force of Opium, better than we can be inform'd out of *Sylvius*'s or *Willis*'s Philofophy; and to fhew that Wine and all other Liquors that are apt and ready to rarefy, will be fufficient to caufe a Sleepinefs.

Nay,

Nay it may be caus'd alfo by any Liquors tho' not too apt to rarefy, if a Quantity large enough be taken, and fo much of it be carried to the Brain, as to produce the requir'd Dilatation, and confequently a Constriction of the Nerves. For this Reason, it is no Wonder that fome People become fleepy and drunk by drinking Water; neither will the Caufe of it be any longer hid, for (cæteris paribus) the rarefying Force of Liquors, which caufe an equal Degree of Sleepinels by different Quantities, is reciprocally proportional to the faid Quantities. Therefore any volatile Salt will caufe a Sleepinefs, and it is wrong to throw in any Remedy of that kind into the Veffels to drive away an Apoplexy, unlefs the too great Vifcidity of the Blood require it: Neither must we use it to extinguish an Acid, for the volatile and acid Salt of Amber attenuates vifcid Blood; but any volatile Salt may be applied outwardly to provoke Motion, just as is done with the Smoke of Vinegar.

Any Body may eafily understand, that if there be two Animals alike in other Respects, and having Nerves of equal Bigness, and equally distant from one another, which have the Arteries of their Brain of unequal Contents, the Animal who has the greatest Arteries will be soonest drunk, and he that has the least will sooner have the Head Ach. For a greater Quantity is required to thrust Out

in Born Animals, &c. 185

out the Sides of a greater Artery to a given Degree of Tenfion, than the Sides of a leffer; for the Quanity of Liquor must be as the Square of the Diameter.

15. I cou'd add to this what the Phyficians of all Ages have faid of a Vertigo; but I will only quote two. The first is that Cassins, who publish'd Problems before the Year 1400. His Answer therefore to the Question why circular Motions caufe a Giddinefs, is this: Circular Motions hinder Transpiration from being perform'd, the Air thrusting in vehemently and hindering it; and likewife as the Body is mov'd circularly, fo are the Matters within us. Since therefore they are agitated together with us, and cannot transpire; even when the Caufe of their Motion ceafes to act, they continue to go round in a Circle. And fuch a Motion of the Humours is the Caufe why Senfe imagines something beyond Nature. This is what he fays, according to Gesner's Translation.

Think ye that Dr. Willis fays any Thing more to the Purpose? Let us hear what he fays in his 7th Chapter of his fecond Exercife, Concerning the Soul of Brutes: The Spirits in the Brain are like Water in a Vial, which is turn'd about together with the Veffel that contains it; and when once a Vortex is made, the Water keeps its Motions some Time, even when the Vessel is at rest: After the Same Manner, when a Man's Head is turn'd, the

the Spirits in the Brain are whirl'd about, and have, as it were, spiral Motions, and some Parcels of them are obscur'd, are carried here and there in Vortices, and often transversly.

16. I fhall omit what has been put out on this Subject in *Etmuller*'s Name; for it is evident that this Great Man would have publifh'd his Works with Emendations, if his ill Fortune had not hinder'd him: For all that was publifh'd under the Name of *Etmuller*'s *Practice*, was only put out by fuch as did it for the fake of filthy Lucre. Which I here mention, left any one fhould look upon those Things to be mine, which Bookfellers will perhaps put out contrary to my Knowledge, and give out that I dictated them to my Scholars.

I return to Cassius and Willis. If they had known that the Obstructions arise in the Arteries fooner than in the Nerves or Veins, and that the Diftention of the Veffels produce the fame Effects, as those that are afcrib'd to a Tumor, or a Matter that obstructs those Veffels, (when we don't know the Quality of that Matter,) they would not have taught that a Vertigo arofe from the Liquor of the Nerves being whirl'd round, but they would have look'd for the Caufe of it in the Arteries : For the Make of the Nerves and the Brain, difcover'd by the most Ingenuous Malpighi, hinders any fuch Effect, and shews those Things to be false, which

in Born Animals, Uc. 187 which are alledged by Cassius and Willis.

17. But tho' fuch Symptoms cou'd be excited by the Liquor which flows thro' the Nerves, yet it is not right to attribute them to that Motion, which appears to be in Things plac'd about us, that feem to turn Becaufe it is plain from Optics, round. that no Object appears remov'd out of its Place, as long as its Image remains in the fame Place in the Retina, and circumfcrib'd after the fame Manner: But the circular Motion of Liquor in the Nerves and Filaments of the Retina, does not change the Place of the Image. Therefore we must not afcribe the Giddinefs, or Vertigo, which happens to People that turn round, to the Vortices of the Liquors. Therefore if we wou'd know the Caufes of a Vertigo, we must look into Lawrence Bellini's Book of the Distempers of the Head, where that great Physician and Philosopher demonstrates, that a Vertigo is not occasion'd by a circular Motion of the Animal Spirits, but (when it becomes a Distemper) by a Removal of the Retina or Nerve by the Diftention of the Arteries of the Eye. Whence it appears that he made use of such Theorems as we do.

18. Hitherto we have difputed of the Theory agreeing with fome Diftempers; now to fhew the Ufe of our Theory, we must explain, what stead they may stand us in, in the Cure of those Diftempers. For in fopo-

foporiferous Diseases, generated after the Manner here mention'd, first of all we must open the Arteries or Veins, all stimulating Medicines must be us'd ; but fuch Salts as are commonly call'd volatile, and Spirits drawn from Hartshorn, Urine, and such Substances, and fuch Remedies also as are call'd Cephalic, are not to be us'd. I know very well how many People I shall have upon me for this Affertion; but having exactly demonstrated the Matter, I dont value the Opinion of the Multitude. Then I advise, that in a Vertigo we must not use any of those volatile Salts, but fuch Things as hinder the Rarefaction of the Blood: I fpeak of the Cure which must be made afternecessary Evacuation. For it is evident that in an idiopathical or original Vertigo, no lefs than in an Apoplexy, the Arteries and Veins must be open'd; but in any other the Patient must be made to vomit, and that for feveral Reasons. For first of all a Vomit washes away the Filth of the Stomach, and the Paffages for Perspiration become more free, which being fupprefs'd, had fo increafed the Quantity of the Blood, as to cause a Vertigo, for the Reason shew'd by Bellini. Then that Liquor is washed out, which afterwards being mixed with the Blood, would either have caused the Blood to increase too much in Quantity, or to be too much rarefied, and by that Means have produc'd a Ver-

in Born Animals, Gc.

Vertigo. There are also other Cases when Vomiting is necessary, when the Distemper arises from a foul Stomach.

19. But let us see what Method of Cure agrees with Willis's Theory. We know by Experience, that it is good to open a Vein in Apoplexies, (obferve here, that we fpeak of fuch an Apoplexy whole Caufe is within the Veffels,) and that fuch an Help does by manifest Reason expel such a Narcotic Force as we fpoke of. Now, if the Spirits in an Apoplexy become unmoveable or torpid, by a foporiferous Body's being admitted into the Nerves, as Sylvins believed; or if the Nerves be fo clogged up by fuch a Body, as to hinder the Spirits from paffing thro' them, as Vepserus will have it; or laftly, if Bodies caufing Apoplexies kill the outmost Companies of the Spirits, or their Centinels that stand at the Gates, as Willis teaches, we must let Bleeding alone, and have Recourse to a knew and unknown kind of Remedy. For I dont believe that opening a Vein can recal to Life Companies of dead Spirits, and raife up the unmoveable and torpid ones, neither that it will draw out or diminish the Matter which clogs up the Nerves: But volatile Salts, as they call them, and Spirits drawn off from Animal Substances by Chymical Fire, will be made use of by famous Men, but with very ill Success. For I have faid before, and again affirm, that fuch Salts and

and Spirits make an Animal fleepy, and like Opium, dull the Senfes, and ftop the Journey of the Spirits thro' the Nerves. But you must take care not to compare a Grain of Opium with a Grain of volatile Salt, for one Grain of Opium often produces the fame Effect as fixty or more Grains of that Salt.

20. Having a great many Reasons to suppose that the Nature of Opium must be like the Salts of Hartshorn, I persuaded Mr. Alexander Monteith, an excellent Man, and a very famous Surgeon, wellskill'd in Chymiftry, to make fome Chymical Experiments upon Opium : He having often try'd the Thing, fhew'd me five Ounces and five Drachms of a volatile Spirits, (as they call it,) drawn from a Pound of Opium, which perform'd the same Phanomena as Spirit of Hartshorn; and besides, from the Opium was drawn off an Ounce and two Drachms and a half of fetid Oil; and laftly, the Caput Mortuum, which fmelled like Hartfhorn, weigh'd feven Ounces and fix Drachms. So that it is no Wonder if the fame Things are performed by volatile Salt, and Spirit of Hartshorn, as by Opium, if a Quantity fit, and proved by Ufe, be taken into the Stomach.

I dont know whether it be worth while to obferve what Sanctorius fays in the 18th Chapter, Sect. 4. of his Statics, that he himfelf experienced, namely, that he perfpired more fleeping than waking, because from what

in Born Animals, &c. 191

what I have already faid, any Body may know the Reafon of it, efpecially if the Sleep be caufed by rarefying Medicines, and apt to occafion Sweating. And the Force of it confifts in this, that Opiates caufe Sweat, and that that which could not obftruct the finall Arteries, cannot obftruct the Nerves.



A DIS-



DISSERTATION

A

Concerning the

CURE of FEVERS

BY

EVACUATION.



Hyficians believe that continu'd Fevers arife from the ill Quality of fome Liquor or Body, exciting those

Symptoms which every Body knows to belong to Fevers; to which Body or Liquor they have given the Name of Morbific Matter. Some will have that Matter to be a Humour, which is commonly fecreted in healthful Bodies, but fo changed in the Sick, as to occafion the Symptoms of Fevers; and which of it felf, that is, by the natural Pufh of the Blood, cannot be fecreted: Some fay that it comes from without, (calling it the *Miafma*,) and joining it felf to the Liquor which muft naturally be fecreted, excites Fe-

CURE of FEVERS, UC. 193

Fevers. No matter which of these are in the right; for all Things will happen in the fame Manner, whether the morbific Matter invades from without, or the Humour within be chang'd into morbific Matter.

2. Phyficians embrac'd thefe Opinions after they had observ'd that most People in Fevers are depriv'd of the Transpiration thro' the Skin, or that other Evacuations, which belong'd to them as Animals, are ftopp'd or diminish'd. But these appeared almost evidently to those who observ'd how Fevers went off; for fome appear'd to be carried off by Sweating, others by Plenty of Urine, and others by a Loofenefs; and that there wou'd be a Criss, when the Secretion was provok'd through any of those Glands which carry the Humour out from an Animal. Wherefore they imagin'd that there was fome Sort of Matter that fed the Difeafe, which was to be expell'd from the Body of the Patient, after it had been made ready to flow, or fo chang'd (by caufing a Concoction and Digeftion, as they call it) as to be eafily rooted out of the Body.

We shan't dispute of that so much celebrated Concoction, but only enquire what Kind of Secretion or Evacuation must be us'd in Fevers, if any is to be us'd. In which Inquiry we shall fay nothing at all of the Cure by Blood-letting, becaufe we are refolv'd only to confider those Evacuations which are com-
194 CURE of FEVERS

commonly made in a found Animal by Ways naturally open to them, and which Phyficians endeavour to provoke, after Blood-letting, when they think it neceffary, and Vomitting, if that be neceffary; and indeed it is often fo.

3. But becaufe now a-Days a great many People are of Opinion that Fevers arife from the ill Quality of the Ferments, which they suppose to belong to every Part, or to the ill Quality of the fermenting Parts of the Blood; and Smatterers like this Opinion mightily, fetting up for Philosophers and Physicians, when they have got a few Words by the End: I thought fit to give an Account of this Subject, in the Words of the most ingenious Nicholas Steno, in his Preface to his Differtation, Concerning a Solid maturally contain'd in a Solid. These are his Words:

Besides the subtile Fluid which goes thro' all Things, we observe at least three Kinds of Fluids in Animals, the first of which is external, the second is internal and common, the third internal and proper to particular Parts.

By the external Fluid in Animals, I mean that Fluid which not only encompasses the Fluid that we see like an Atmosphere, but also touches the remaining Parts of the Surface of the Animal continu'd thro' the larger Holes, as the whole Surface of the Aspera Arteria, the whole Surface of the Way of the Aliment, &c. Then, he says, I call that the internal Fluid,

Fluid, which does not communicate with the external, but by the intermediate Passages or Strainers of the Capillary Vessels. The internal common Fluid is that which is contain'd in the Veins, Arteries, Lymphatics, and perhaps in the Nerves.

The proper internal Fluid is that which is round about the capillary Veffels of the common Fluid, and is different, according to the Difference of the Places in which it is, &c.

Then he adds, that the Reafon why in different Places different Juices are excreted from the fame Blood, depends upon the Places themfelves, which, he fays, is explain'd by the three following Confiderations.

I. The Confideration of the Capillary Veffels of the internal common Fluid, which alone is regarded by those Men that ascribe all to a straining thro' divers Pores, of whose Opinion I have been for some Time.

II. The Confideration of a proper internal Fluid, which alone obtains with those that ascribe a particular Ferment to every Part, who may be partly in the right, tho' the Term of Ferment is built upon a Comparison taken from too particular a Thing.

III. The Confideration of the Solid of every Part, which is follow'd by fuch, as by attributing to every Part its particular Figure, pretend to know fomething proper to each Part; which indeed we know nothing of, and which, according to the Knowledge that we have 02

195

196 CURE of FEVERS,

hitherto had of Matter, can be nothing elfe than the porous Surface of that Solid, and the subtile Fluid going thro' those Pores. I shou'd, fays he, make too great a Digression, if I (bou'd apply what I have laid down to the Explication of what daily happens in our Bodies, and can be explain'd no other Way: It is enough to hint here, that the Particles, which after various Manners are separated from the external Fluid, are carried into the internal common Fluid by Strainers, from whence, being also secreted different Ways, and being by a new Straining transmitted into the internal proper Fluids, they are by Apposition joined to the folid Parts after the Manner of Fibres or Parenchyma's, as they are determin'd by the Property of each Part, unknown to us, and included in the Confideration of the three Things afore faid.

4. But although in our Differtation of the Circulation of the Blood through the fmalleft Veffels, we have fhewn, that fuch Ferments are not found in the Bodies of Animals, yet, to be underftood by those who cannot comprehend a mathematical Demonstration, we shall explain the Thing fo, that even Beginners may easily know what we mean. From what Steno fays, it is plain, that the Question is, How it comes to pass that fo many different Liquors are secreted out of the same Blood, and after what Manner? Why Bile in the Liver, Urine in the Kidneys, and other Liquors in other Parts? The An-

197

Antients attributed it to a different Attraction; which Opinion may be better illustrated now by fuch as understand Sir Ifaac Newton's Philosophy, than it cou'd then be by them. Since that Time a great many Phyficians having thrown out the Word Attraction, wou'd have this performed by Ferments, which they suppos'd to be different in the different Glands or Strainers of different Kinds. But we have flewn that there are no Glands, which should be look'd upon as Strainers, bor'd with Holes of different Diameters. We have also shewn, that the Orifices of all the Veffels are fimilar, and circular; whence it follows, that the first and third Confideration of Steno are of no Force. But it follows alfo, that if with thefe Men you lay alide Attraction (which if you admit, there will be no Need of Ferments) for want of Glands that have Paffages of different Figures, the Ferments, or those internal Fluids which are proper to every Part, must be all wash'd away and carried off by the Force of the Blood going thro' the Arteries. And if any are ftopp'd, that may happen as well in one Place as in another, being ftay'd by no Difference of the Places, (which is not any where fuppos'd,) and therefore the Secretion will be made thro' any Part, without Regard to any Ferment.

5. I have often wonder'd, that fo many People would fuffer themfelves to be impos'd upon,

0 3

198 CURE of FFVERS

upon, when at the fame Time they boafted their Knowledge of the Nature of Things: A great many of the Antient Phylicians and Philosophers ascrib'd to every Part of the Body Qualities, or a Temperature made up of Qualities, by whofe Help, they faid, the Secretions and Actions were directed. Our Authors of Ferments juftly look'd upon those Qualities and Temperatures as a Refuge for Ignorance, becaufe they had been invented without Foundation, built upon no Phanomena, and known only by Name: Therefore they faid that every Part had its particular Ferment and Secretion. But the Nature of no one of those Ferments is better known to thefe great Improvers of Phyfick, than the particular Nature of the Temperatures were to the Antients. Neither is any Property of the Ferment of any particular Part better known to these Adepts, than the Nature of occult Qualities to a Peripatetician. Whence it is too plain, that this Contrivance has introduc'd no new Thing in Phyfick, except Words, as I just now faid in my Differtation, Concerning the Circulation of the Blood thro' the smallest Vessels, when I Spoke of the Glands.

6. Let us proceed to other Matters. We have faid, that it is obferv'd that Fevers go off by increasing the Secretion thro' the Skin, fometimes by increasing the Secretion through the Renal Glands, or by causing a Diar-

Diarrhaa thro' the Glands of the Liver of the Pancreas, or the Inteffines. We need not speak of other Kinds of Crifes, unless any one will add to the reft the Jaundice, which fometimes comes upon a Patient as the Fever goes off.

Then we observe, that there are no fecreting Veffels, and no Glands in our Bodies ferving for Secretion, which cannot be increas'd to fuch a Bulk as to be able to receive and separate every Humour, even that which is naturally apt to be fecreted in other Glands. For we have observ'd, that in the Jaundice the gross Liquor, which is naturally fecreted in the Glands of the Liver, is then fecreted in the cuticular ones, and that the too great Influx of Saliva thro' its Glands is stopp'd, by causing the Patient to sweat, and drawing off the falival Liquor by the cuticular Glands, we see that a Diarrhaa is ftopp'd by turning the Humour into the Paffages of Transpiration open'd by Sudorifics, and that a Spitting cures a Loofenefs, and that a Loofeness being again excited, the Spitting will ceafe, which also, as well as other Secretions, is taken off by an abundant Flux of Urine.

7. It is observ'd in Fevers, especially, how often any Liquor may go thro' any Paffage dilated by Art or Nature, tho' there is no kind of Fever but what goes off for the most Part by the Glands, or rather by Sweat thro' the Pores, 04

Pores, fooner than any other Secretion: Therefore there is no Kind of febrifick Matter, but what can be brought out thro' the Glands defign'd for Transpiration. For tho' part of the Blood, (whether upon Account of the Fault of fome Secretion, and an Hindrance of the Motion of the Humours, or the ill Quality of the Fluid introduc'd thro' the chyliferous Veffels,) or any Humour may be forc'd or chang'd into any Nature, yet that is not the Thing wanted; but we wou'd only know in what Condition of Corruption it is chang'd or perverted, when it causes Fevers.

For the Solution of which Problem, Experiments muft be made ufe of, which fhew that it is a Property of the febrific Matter, to be able to go off thro' any Veffels, which ufually happens. But this Thing will be more manifest from what follows, where we must confider, in what Proportion the natural Secretions are, and what Reasonings may be deduc'd from the Knowledge of it to ferve our prefent Purpose.

8. Namely, from the 59th Aphorifm of the first Section of Sanctorius, the Excretions made in a given Time have commonly this Proportion, that if the

Excretion by Stool be as 4,

That by Urine is as 16, and

That thro' the Pores of the Skin as 40, or more.

200

It is plain by this, that Perspiration is a Secretion which is double the Sum of the other Secretions, (we take here the mean Quantity of the Perspiration,) and twelve Times as great as the Excretion by Stool. Here we must observe, that the Excretion thro' the Mouth made by Refpiration (which, as Sanctorius in his 5th Aphorism, Sect. 1. fays, does amount to about half a Pound a Day) must be afcrib'd to Perspiration; for the Veficles of the Lungs are no lefs expos'd to the Air than the whole Skin: Neither can the Transpiration, breaking out of the Veffels and Veficles of the Lungs, be naturally hinder'd, any more than that which is made at the Skin thro' the Veffels that end there. For the Perspiration is made thro' the Pores of the Veffels that are expos'd to the Air. There are therefore fudoriferous Veffels like lengthen'd Canals (tho' we shall make use of that Term with the Vulgar) in the Skin, more than in the Lungs, in which there are no fudoriferous Canals. If therefore, to return to my Purpofe, that Excretion thro' the Mouth be added to the Perspiration, the cuticular Excretion will be the Triple of the Sum of the others, and fourteen Times more than the Excretion by Stool. Wherefore the Perspiration will be at least ten Times as much as the last-mention'd Secretion in our Country. For the Perspiration arising from the Lungs is equal to the Excefs

202 CURE of FEVERS

Excess which one may ascribe to the Perspiration at Padua more than in England.

9. Becaufe Fevers (and feveral other Diftempers) arife as well from the Suppression of the cuticular Secretion, as from any other Suppreffion, and that that Suppreffion is double, or even triple of any other; therefore the Suppression of Half or a third Part of the peripirable Serum, will generate a Fever equal to that, which wou'd be occafion'd by the Suppreffion of all the other Secretions together. And because the cuticular Secretion is at least ten Times greater than that by Stool, therefore the Diminution of the tenth Part of the perfpirable Serum will raife a Fever equal to that which the Suppreffion of the Stool wou'd occasion. For the fame Reafons, the Help of half or a third Part of the Perspiration will be of as great Service in expelling a Fever, as the Help of all the other Secretions together; and the Help of a tenth Part of the Perspiration will be of as great Service as the whole Excretion by Stool, and the whole Perspiration will do ten Times the Service as ten Times the Excretion by Stool.

10. It is evident, that fince the Matter of any Secretion may be carried off by increasing any other Secretion, and any Secretion may be increas'd in any Proportion by a proper Medicine; and lastly, fince Secretions may be fo increas'd, as to have the fame

203

fame Proportion as they naturally have, therefore a greater Quantity of morbific Matter may, in a given Time, be drawn by a cuticular Secretion, than by any other, in Proportion of the Quantity of the cuticular Secretion which naturally happens to the Quantity or Weight of any other natural Secretion. Wherefore a Diftemper will fooner be carried off by making an Evacuation thro' the Pores of the Skin, than by any other Secretion, and that in the Proportion mention'd, efpecially where the Pores of the Skin are very much open, after the Manner declar'd at the End of the fecond Section, which will be repeated in the 12th.

From this it follows, that a Diftemper can't be fo eafily remov'd by increasing the Secretion by Stool, as it can by increasing the cuticular Secretion, unless the Increase of the former be to the Increase of the latter in an inverse Ratio of the Secretions, or as the Quantity or Moles of the latter is to the Quantity of the former in a found Body. Wherefore the Secretion by Stool must be an Hundred Times greater than the natural, that there may be as great an Evacuation made in the Space of one Day, as is made by a Perspiration ten Times greater than the natural in the fame Time; or elfe he must have a hundred Stools, who in a State of Health us'd to have but one; and two hundred or three hundred, if he us'd to have two

204 CURE of FEVERS

two or three. But he that in one Day, in a State of Health, us'd to have ten Stools, must when fick (if he wou'd be cur'd by Stool) have a thousand Stools a Day.

11. Then it follows from the Premiss, that if you have any Fever under Hand, (the fame holds in any Distemper arising within an Animal,) that it is ten Times more probable to cure it by Sweat, than by Stool. For fince the tenth Part of the Perspiration, or a Perspiration thro' the tenth Part of the Skin, is equal to, and as eafily caus'd, as the Secretion by Stool; therefore the Probability of the Cure to be effected by Perspiration, is ten Times greater than the Probability of the Cure by Stool. For it appears that there is but one Chance for this last, and ten Chances against it, that is, as many as there are Quantities of Perspiration equal to it. And therefore the Expectation of Stool is as I to II, and the Expectation of Perspiration as 10 to 11. (See the famous Hugens's Book of Reasonings on the Play of the Dice.) Therefore the Expectation of Perspiration is ten Times greater than that of purging by Stool; or the Value of the first Expectation is ten Times the Value of the laft. Now it is the Part of a prudent Physician to make use of the most probable Means of Cure.

I faid that Fevers are for the most part driven away by Sweat, or by increasing the Perspiration fo as to make it fensible. Sancto-

205

Sanctorius, in his 9th Aphorism, Sect. 1, 2. fays, that any cold Weather that happens in Summer hinders about a third Part of the Perspiration, and that unless it becomes senfible, it generates Corruption, or Sickness. Thus far he fays. But by Sweat or increas'd Perspiration, I mean that that happens when the Humours are concocted.

12. We have hitherto fpoken of fuch Secretions which are increas'd by a Medicine taken inwardly, and paffing thro' the Ways where the Blood circulates. Wherefore what has been faid of Secretion by Stool, has a Regard to that which is perform'd in the Glands of the Liver, of the Pancreas, and of the Inteftines, the Increafe of which Secretion is made by Medicines properly purgative, or acting upon the Animal beyond the firft Ways.

For as to the Excretion which is made by Help of lenitive purging Medicines, or freeing the firft Ways from the Foulnefs flicking in 'em, they need not be any more referr'd to Purgation, or the Increafe of Secretion by Stool, than the washing of the outward Skin ought to be. For these Lenitives only promote the Perspiration of the Intestines like that of the Skin, and to be ascrib'd to it; for when the Pores of the Intestines are open, a greater Quantity of Perspiration breaks out, than from an equal Quantity of the outward Surface of the Body. And these Pores are open'd by

206 CURE of FEVERS

by Medicines washing off the Filth, and chiefly by proper Emeticks.

No wonder therefore, if when the first Ways are foul'd and daub'd over with too much Filth, by making use of a softening Medicine which just washes, there appear sometimes manifest Tokens of Concoction, and a necessary Quantity of Sweat breaks forth, the Intestines promoting it, when by an absterging Medicine they are eas'd of the Burden of the Filth.

We must here observe, that the Proportion of Secretion given by Sanctorius obtains in healthful Bodies, in which this excellent Phyfician has examin'd all that is voided by Stool, made up of what has pass'd the Lacteals, and what not. But we chiefly speak of the Excrements fent down from the Mafs of the Blood thro' the hepatical and pancreatick Ducts, and also by the Passages of the intestinal Glands. For in Bodies that are healthful, and take no Phyfick, this Excretion thro' the Ducts, which draw their Liquor from the Mafs of the Blood, is very fmall in Quantity, and fcarce perceivable in those that go to Stool but feldom. Wherefore the Ratio of the cuticular to the ventral Secretion, will be much greater than the Ratio of 10 to 1, or even greater than the Ratio of 100 to 1. What may be deduc'd from hence, is obvious to any one.

13. Let there be two elaftick Canals having fimilar Orifices of unequal Diameters; let them receive at every Pulfe Quantities of fimilar Liquors proportional to the Orifices; and from the Knowledge of the Elements of Mathematicks it will follow,

First, That if the Number of Pulses in the leffer Canal be greater than the Number of Pulses in the great one, in an inverse Ratio of the Orifices, the Quantities of the Liquid which flow in a given Time thro' the unequal Canals, will be equal; but the Velocity of the Liquid flowing thro' the leffer will be greater than the Velocity of that flowing thro' the biggeft, in a Ratio of the Pulses.

Secondly, If the Number of Strokes or Pulfes in the greater Canals, be greater (that is, if the Turns in which the great Canal receives its Liquor, come quicker in the fame Time, or are more in Number than those in which the fmall Canal receives its Liquor) the Quantity of the Liquor flowing thro' it in a given Time, will be greater than that flowing thro' the other in a Ratio compounded of the Ratio of the Number of the Pulfes of the greater, to the Number of the Pulses of the leffer, and of the Ratio of the Orifice of the greater, to the Orifice of the leffer; but the Velocity of the Liquor flowing thro' the great Canal, will be to the Velocity of the Liquor flowing thro' the fmall one in the given Ratio of the Pulfes.

From

208

From whence it follows, that where the Pulfe is more quick than naturally, that is, where the Number of Strokes or Pulfes is greater in the Ratio first given, (as it happens in Fevers,) the Velocity of the Liquid going thro' the Arteries is greater than the natural, tho' the Pulse is less than the natural, that is, the Canal is lefs, and not fo much dilated. Then if the Number of the Pulses in the great Canal be greater, that is, if the Pulse be both quicker and greater than the natural, the Quantity of the Blood going thro' in a given Time, that is, in the compound Ratio mention'd in the fecond Place, (this is often the Cafe in Fevers,) and the Velocity of the Blood will be in the Ratio of the Pulses, or as the Quickness of the Pulse. Let those whose Business it is, see how these Phanomena of the Pulses may be explain'd by a Circulation of the Blood flower than the natural, afcrib'd to Fevers by feveral Pretenders to Phyfick.

This is what I thought fit to fay of the Cure of Fevers by Evacuation. But take this Caution along with you, viz. that it is abfurd at any Time to fay that Fevers are cur'd without any previous Evacuation. For we did not intend to fpeak of that Kind of Phyfick, but only to fhew the Ignorance of those who have lately wrote, that Fevers were fooner cur'd by a purging Medicine, than one that promotes Perspiration.

14. Since

209

14. Since I have so often spoken of Perspiration, I beg Leave here to explain and demonstrate *Bellini*'s Theorem; of which, tho' it is a very fine one, no Body that I know of has given a Demonstration. This is the Theorem.

The whole Quantity of Perspiration coming out of a Villus, or hollow Fibre, or small Canal, whose Weight is one Scruple, is the thousand two hundredth Part of a Scruple.

This I will fhew from the following Method.

Sanctorius has affirm'd, that what is perspir'd in the Space of 24 Hours, weighs 50 Ounces, which Ounces amount to 1200 Scruples, that is, 50 + 24 9. Therefore in the Space of one Hour we perfpire 50 Scruples, and every Minute of an Hour $\frac{50 \,\overline{9}}{60}$, or the Quantity of 5 Weights, 6 of which make one Scruple. And as the mean Weight of a Man's Body is 160 Pounds, which are at least equal to 60000 Scruples, or 50 x 12003, every Hour, from the whole Body will perfpire a Quantity not lefs than the thousand two hundredth Part of the whole. And therefore every Part will in the fame Time emit the two hundred thousandth Part of it felf, or in the Space of every Hour each Scruple P

210 CURE of FEVERS

Scruple will emit by Perfpiration 1200 of a Scruple.

Now in a Man, the Sum of whole Villi, thro' which Perspiration is perform'd, is the fixtieth Part of the Body, or of about 3 Pounds, the faid Sum will be of at least 1000 \Im . Now thro' this 1000 \Im of Villi must be fweated out every Hour 50 \Im of perspir'd Matter, or thro' $I \Im$ every Hour will pass out $\frac{50 \Im}{1600}$ or $\frac{19}{20}$. Wherefore in the Space of one Minute, or $\frac{19}{60 \times 20}$ or $\frac{1}{1200}$ of a Scruple, as was found by that eminent Man Lawrence Bellini.

15. And becaufe the Weight of the Perfpiration, cateris paribus, anfwers to the Weight of the perfpiring Body, therefore in a Body weighing 120 Pounds, or 45000 Scruples, the Perfpiration of 24 Hours will be equal to 900 Scruples, and the Perfpiration of every Hour to $37\frac{1}{2}$ Scruples. Therefore every Hour the Perfpiration of the whole Body (and therefore of every Part and Scruple of it) will be the thoufand two hundredth Part of it, becaufe 45000 \exists are equal to 1200×37 $\frac{1}{2}$.

Laftly, in fuch a Body, whofe outer Skin or *Cuticula*, together with the Skin of the Womb, Lungs, and Intestines, made about two

by EVACUATION. 211.

two Pounds, the Sum of the Villi thro' which the Perfpiration paffes at laft, is not lefs than 750 Scruples, or the 60th Part of the Body: For the Body was of 120 Pounds, or of 45000 Scruples. Now thro' 750 Scruples every Hour 37 $\frac{19}{2}$ were to pafs out, or thro' I Scruple $\frac{37}{750}$, which are equal to $\frac{19}{20}$ becaufe 20 × 37 $\frac{1}{2}$ are equal to 750. Therefore every Moment, or every 60th Part of an Hour, there went out (thro' a Villus or fmall Canal of one Scruple) $\frac{1}{60 \times 20}$ of a Scruple, or the thoufand two hundredth Part of a Scruple. Which was to be scruple.



P 2

A DIS-



DISSERTATION

A Short

Concerning the

EFFECTS

OF

ACIDS and ALKALIES

IN THE

CURE of DISTEMPERS.



OST of the Writers of the laft Age, who have treated of Phyfic, or at least fuch of them as are now efteem'd, have affirm'd that most Distempers did arise from an acid Body flowing in our Blood. Some others of late have affirm'd, that all Diftempers are occafion'd by too great an Influx of an alkalic Body, or too great Plenty of Humours. Ignorance and Lazinefs, befides an eager Defire of Gain and Fame, produc'd thefe Sects; for it was eafy to inculcate the common Notions of Acids and Alkalies, and with

Of ACIDS and ALKALIES, &c. 213 with those two hard and founding Words to gain the Applause of the common People. Let us then examine the Matter in a few Words.

2. They that deduce all Diftempers from an Acid or Alkali, ought to give fome certain Meaning to those Words: For if you fay that an Acid is fuch a Body as takes away a Diftemper, when (as is fuppofed) it has imbibed an Alkalic Salt, you both deceive your felf, and occasion a Dispute about a Word, and fhew that you don't understand what an Acid or an Alkali is. One might as well fay, that all Diftempers and their Cures arife from a Terrestrial and a Celestial Matter, calling that Terrestrial which is corrected by the Celeftial, and Celeftial that which is moderated by the Terrestrial. But it is evident, that unless a certain Meaning be fixed to thefe Words, the Difpute among Phyficians about Acids and Alkalies becomes as useless as a Dispute about a Terrestrial and a Celeftial Matter: For fince thefe Words have no certain Signification, and there may be infinite Kinds of the Terrestrial and Celeftial Matter, differing in Subtilty of Parts, Purity, and Simplicity of Miftion; as there are infinite Kinds of Acids, differing in Volatility, Fixity, and Purity, and one Acid is destroyed by another. Hence it follows, that if a Diftemper be supposed to be occafioned by fome Acid, we don't from that Chy-P 3

214 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES.

Chymical Theory refolve what Medicament to use, any more than if the Disease did not, or ought not to be supposed to owe its Origin to an Acid. Neither can one from fuch a Theory know what Sort of Alkali to apply, not knowing what Sort of Acid caufed the Diftemper; neither alfo can it be known, whether an Alkali must be taken rather than an Acid, and be opposed to the Diftemper; and if an Acid must be used, what Kind of Acid it must be. Nay, it is a Mercy if a Phyfician with this Theory, does not in the fame dreaming Way define the Kind of the Acid, fit indeed according to his Theory, but in it felf pernicious. Let the Patients think themfelves well used, when they fall into the Hands of a Phyfician, who attributes nothing to his Theory, but all to Practice.

3. What remains therefore, is, that we only learn by Ufe and Experience, what Remedy is proper for a given Diftemper; for finding of which Remedy this Theory is of no Ufe, as being built but on few Obfervations, and those perplexed; it can therefore impose upon no one but an uncautious, nor please any but a lazy Person, who is not used to the Labour of the Mind. And what I say of this Theory, I have before faid of any other Theory not built upon a sufficient Number of Observations, nor after an Aftronomical Manner, that is, concerning all fuch

in the CURE of Distempers. 215

fuch Hypothefis, which for Want of a competent Number of Observations (and those faithful ones) have not carried the Thing fo far, as to bring it to be treated of Geometrically. I have given an Example of it in the Diftempers of the Eyes, (fee Sect. 14, 15, 16, 17.) which God willing, I will illuftrate in the Edition of the Problem of Caffus Falix, who was commonly called by the Name of Iatrosophist. Bellini gave an Example of it concerning letting Blood.

4. But to come to the Matter : It is obferved, that there is no Sort of Evacuation, but what may be perform'd in the fame Man, the fame Way affected, as well by Alkalies as by Acids: For Sweat is occasioned by Acid Salt of Amber, and that Acid volatile Salt which the French draw of from Silver and Tin. See the Memoirs of the Royal Academy at Paris for the Year 1692. The Bones of Fishes, of all Animals, any Blood, especially that of a Goat, Salt of Hartshorn, and several other Alkalies, do likewife provoke Sweat. The fame Things are also Diuretic. But Spitting may be provoked by Quickfilver, that has no Acid in it, and by corrofive Mercury made by an Acid, or the fame Corrofive precipitated by an Alkali: It may also be occasioned by the Force of Cold shutting the Pores which ferve for Perspiration, or by a Stone stopping the Urinary. Passages. Wherefore all Maladies which P4

216 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES

which owe their Origin to Evacuations either ftopp'd or too much increased, are neither occasioned or to be cured by an Acid or Alkalic Body alone.

5. Blood-letting, which carries off feveral Diftempers, and occasions fome, does chiefly fhew that Difeafes owe their Rife and Cure to other Things than Acids or Alkalies. This alfo appears from the monthly Courfes of Women, the Want of which occasions feveral Diftempers, commonly afcribed to the vitiated Quality or Crafis of the Blood, whether arifing from an Acid or Alkali, as Pains in the Head, Ulcers of all Kinds, Inflammations, Convulsions, Fevers, Gc. which all are carried off by the Return of the Menles. Nay there is fcarce any Kind of Difeafe, but what may and does arife from the Encreafe or Diminution of the Menses, and may be carried off by their being reftored to a Regularity. Here also we must observe, that if the Abundance of an Acid or of an Alkali caufes all Diftempers, Blood-letting or the Monthly Flux is of no Use: For fince fuch a Body must be equally spread all over the Blood, it will go out of the Animal Body in Proportion to the Blood emitted, or be retained in Proportion to the Blood retained, and still continues to be a Caufe of a vicious Blood. I have always laughed at those Men, which preferring an Hypothesis to Experience, made use of that Argument against Bloodletting,

in the CURE of Distempers. 217

letting, when they ought to have made use of it against the Supposition, that Acids and Alkalies were the Caufes and Cures of all Difeafes; they might also have made use of it against the regular flowing of the Menses. This was the Argument of ignorant Chymifts, who did not know that Blood-letting did commonly let out the Morbific Matter, which is for the most Part viscid, and not prejudicial as it is an Acid or an Alkali; and the Blood by that Means becomes fitter for Circulation and the Nutrition of the Animal; and that it carries off feveral Obstructions, especially Inflammatory ones, as Bellini has demonstrated in his Treatife of Blood-letting. But if the Diftemper was occafion'd by any Salts freely wandering about the Veffels, Blood-letting or the Monthly Courfes would be in vain.

6. Jefuit's Bark fhews, that the Cure of Fevers is owing neither to an Acid nor to an Alkali; for whether you call the Bark Acid or Alkali, you will fee feveral Things, which like it produce Acid and Alkalic Liquors, and Acid or Alkalic Salts, which yet do not carry off Fevers like this *Cortex*. For if you afcribe the Cure only to the Acid or Alkalic Powers, you muft afcribe the Power of effecting that Cure to every other Bark, which has fuch Acid or Alkalic Powers. And if you fay that there are feveral Kinds of Acids, and alfo of Alkalies, and that one Kind 218 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES.

Kind of Acids gives a Tincture to one Kind of Alkalies fooner than others, fuch an Affertion will fignify nothing. For first, all those Things would expel Fevers, fome indeed fooner than others, there being different Intervals of Time, which does not happen; then you don't afcribe the Cure to any Acid or Alkalic Body, but to a Body which is proved by Experiments to have feveral other Corpufcles befides the Acid and the Alkalic ones: And it is to those Powers or Corpuscles that the Cure of Fevers is owing. For if the Forces were of the fame Kind, and only different in Degree, that is in Quantity; any Acid or Alkalic Bodies would do the fame as the Cortex Peruvianus, if a greater or a lefs Quantity (according as Use shewed) was given. For we know that it is not any Quantity of the Bark which expels a Fever. I believe the Experiment to be true, that an Infusion of the Bark (commonly call'd Quina Quina) in Water, tinges with Red the Juice of Heliopotrium mix'd with Water, as well as Acids do. But a Decoction of Saffafras Wood gives a redder Tincture to the Juice of the Heliopotrium mix'd with Water, for which Reason the Bark of Sassafras ought to be more Acid than the Jesuit's Bark: But yet Jesuit's Bark cures intermitting Fevers much better. Laftly, I caufed fome Chymical Experiments to be made upon Jesuit's Bark: From two Pounds of it was drawn an Acid Spirit,

in the CURE of Distempers. 219

Spirit, which tinged with a red Colour five Ounces and a half of Solution of Heliotropium or Turnfole; the fame Sort of Spirit was drawn off from feveral other Barks, not one of which could cure intermitting Fevers. Befides, this very Acid Spirit drawn from Jesuit's Bark does no good in intermitting Fevers, wherefore it is plain that in this Cafe an Acid does no Service, neither can any Benefit be hoped from any Degree or Difference of Acids. Moreover, if you fay that one Acid or one Alkali differs from another, and that there are in the Things themselves some hidden Properties of those Salts, then you fly off again from the boafted Powers of Acids and Alkalies, and fall back fhamefully to occult Qualities, and fuch Trifles.

7. Tho' I have here argu'd concerning the Virtue of an Acid in the Cure of Fevers, yet it is not improper to take notice, that a Decoction of Chamomile Flowers in Water tinges Syrup of Violets with Green, Solution of Turnfole in Water with Red, and Solution of Salt of Saturn with White. Here we have a Marine, an Acid, and an Alkalic Salt; yet these Flowers carry off an intermitting Fever with the fame Success as the Bark, tho' of a quite different Virtue with Respect to the Acid Salt. But before I proceed to other Things, I cannot but take Notice of those Men, who used to object to me, when I gave my Lectures at Leyden, that the

220 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES

the Powder of the Bark must of neceffity flick in the Stomach, not being able to mix with the Blood upon Account of its Gravity, though at the fame Time we know that it fwims in Water, Oil, Spirit of Hartshorn, and rectified Spirit of Wine, to shew what Detriment is brought to the Art of Physic by the ignorant Industry of some Men.

8. Now for a Word or two to those that deduce all Diftempers from an Acid, and pretend to cure them with all Eafe imaginable with an Alkali. The Honourable Mr. Boyle has long fince shewn, that there is no Acid in the Human Body; and yet how many cry, that the Ulcers in the Lungs arife from an Acid, and refer that fharp Spittle, which Hippocrates takes Notice of to a corroding Acid? But, as I have often observ'd, there is nothing Acid in that Spittle, but a great Quantity of Salt, or of a fait Body, like Hartshorn; for this Spittle does not change Infusion of Turnsole into a red Colour; but it turns Syrup of Violets into green, and makes the limpid Solution of corrofive Sublimate become white. Of the fame Nature is the Water drawn from the Belly of living Patients fick of a Dropfy, as I have often experienced; and therefore they are quite mistaken, who have long affirmed without Contradiction, that a Dropfical Ascites is occasioned by an Acid gnawing the Lymphatic Veffels.

9. But

in the CURE of Distempers. 221

9. But least our Alkalic Physicians should triumph, by faying, that even according to my Observations all Distempers may be carried off by Acids, I would have them obferve that in many Fevers, Pains, Deliriums, old and inveterate Ulcers, and especially of the Bladder, Penis and Uterus, the Bodies of Cantharides have proved very fuccefsful, both apply'd outwardly to the Skin, and alfo taken inwardly into the Stomach. But eight Ounces of Cantharides, by the Help of Chymistry, have afforded me 13 Drachms and a half of Spirit more Alkalic than Spirit of Hartshorn, 12 Drachms of Salt more Alkalic than Salt of Hartfhorn, eight Drachms and a half of black fetid Oil, and three Ounces of Caput Mortuum smelling like Hartshorn; which being applied to the Skin of those that imagine no Remedies but Acids to have any Virtue, would cure them of that Madnefs. But if, when the Madnefs is over, the Spafmodic Motions, and Grief, and Despair of Success, should afflict them, they must make use of the Roots of Casmunar Zedoary, and the wild Valerian, whole Decoction with Water tinges Syrup of Violets with Green, and Turnfole with Red, and which may allo ferve for a Remedy to those who attribute all to Alkalies. The Patrons of either Sect will be cured by the Ipeca-coanna, or Virginia Snake-Weed, if they have a Dyfentery, or want an Alexipharmacon : Becaufe a Decoction

222 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES

coction of these Roots in Water tinge Turnfole with Red, and Syrup of Violets with Green. But I am at a Loss to think how these Gentlemen will go about to cure themfelves; for it is pleasant and useful to become a Philosopher and a Physician in two Words. But a Philosopher and Physician of this fort, in order to disprove my Opinion, will in vain have Recourse to white or black Hellebore, both which Roots tinge Turnfole with Red, and Syrup of Violets with Green; and therefore can neither be a pure Acid, or a pure Alkali.

10. Now I'll give you an eafy Demonftration of two Theorems deduced from the Honourable *Robert Boyle*'s Difcoveries. The first is this:

There are no Fermentations of the Blood in the Human Body, fince Mr. Boyle has fhewn that there is no Acid in it.

Then the Plants that we eat, how full foever of Acid they are, yet they are foon chang'd into Alkalies by the Action of the Stomach, and of the Lungs and Heart, which caufe the Circulation of our Fluid; therefore Acids are fo far from caufing or curing Diftempers, and of deftroying the Alkalic Salts of the Blood, that Acids receiv'd into the Blood do rather beget an Alkalic Humour. No Body doubts but that there is Marine Salt in the Blood, or a fmall Quantity of Salt like Sea-Salt, and that the faid Mr.

in the CURE of Distempers. 223

Mr. Boyle shews evidently : But Raymond Viensfens has of late pretended to find an Acid in the Blood, having (as he fays) endeavour'd to go farther than Mr. Boyle. This Raymond from fifty Pounds of Blood drew off half an Ounce of Acid Spirit, after he had mix'd in about an Ounce of Salt coming from calcin'd Blood, with three Ounces of Bole or Earth, by Help of a reverberatory Fire. These are his Words: Now the mean Quantity of Blood flowing in an Human Body fcarce exceeds twenty Pounds, and therefore if what Raymond fays be true, the Quantity of that Acid Liquor, which could be drawn from the whole Mass of my Blood, would not exceed an hundred Grains, in which Liquor there must be a great Deal of Water: Therefore that Salt may be look'd upon as nothing. But Raymond does not observe, that that Acid Spirit comes from the Bole; for three Ounces of Bole in Glafs Veffels have eafily been made to yield about a Drachm and a half of Acid Spirit. I take every Day five Scruples of Sea-Salt at Dinner: Raymond unknowingly drew a Spirit from a Salt like this, or the Spirit or Acid Phlegm of the Bole. From thefe Things therefore its plain, that Sea-Salt quickly changes all Acids Salts into Salts like the Salt of Hartshorn by the Force of the Circulation of the Humour flowing in the Body of the Animal; and that Raymond Vieussens's great Book of Prin-

224 Of ACIDS and ALKALIES, Oc.

Principles is ridiculous almost from the Beginning to the End.

But to return to the Matter, I have found by Experiments, that the greateft Part of the Remedies of the fierceft Diftempers have nothing in them of Acid or Alkali, or of a Body made up of both: And therefore that those who afcribe the Cause or Cure of all Diftempers to Acids or Alkalies, are altogether in the Wrong.



SOME



SOME OBSERVATIONS

Concerning

WOMENS Monthly Courfes:



F young Animals excreted as much as they take in, they would not grow; therefore in an healthful and growing Animal a great-

er Quantity of Blood is daily accumulated than has been or will be loft. The Quantity of this accumulated Blood is known from the Encreafe of the Bulk and Weight of the growing Animal. Hence it is plain, that in an Animal that has done growing, there is a greater Quantity of Blood accumulated than that which before was loft.

2. For whilf Animals grow, the Stomach, or the Heart, is increas'd in fuch Manner, as to be in a Ratio of their Bulk, if we compare the Stomach and Heart with the other Muscles and Membranes: But the Q Forces

226 OBSERVATIONS concerning

Forces of the Stomach and Heart are increafed in Proportion to their Bulk; therefore the Increase of Forces is proportional to the Increase of Bulk. This is plain in the Heart, and in the other Mulcles, and therefore in the Stomach, if it has only the Force of a Muscle; for from a greater Stomach, which has a greater Number of Glands, and abounds more with warm Effluvia, will proceed a greater Quantity of Ferment; and a greater Quantity of Heat will arife, either out of the Stomach, or the Viscera next to it, which are increas'd together with it; and for that Reafon a greater Quantity of all forts of Effluvia, which, as fome will have it, the Stomach throws out, to change the Food into Chyle.

3. Becaufe in a growing Animal the Ventricles of the Heart did receive and throw out a greater Quantity of Blood than what was equal to the Quantity loft, that is, greater than the Nutrition and Reparation of the Body only would require; therefore it is plain, that when the Body ceafes to increafe, there is also a greater Quantity of Blood generated in a found Animal, than what is fufficient for the Nourishment or Repairing of the Losses of the Body: Since the Stomach and the Heart are increas'd in Proportion to the fimilar Viscera, and the Forces of fimilar Viscera are increased in Proportion to their Bulk. Therefore the Question is, in what Pro-

WOMENS Monthly Courfes. 227

Proportion the Blood is accumulated above that Quantity which is necessary for Nutrition, and to repair the Losses of the Blood loft, in Animals that have done growing, and have not their Magnitude any way increas'd.

4. Let us examine the Effect of this Thing in fome Animals. We observe, that in Women that have almost done growing, an Hamorragy is every Month excreted through the Veffels of the Womb, and they have a Flux of Blood out of their Body, during a Period known to every Body. If the Quantity of Blood expell'd at that Time be divided by the Number of Days and Hours between two Courses of Blood, you will have the Quantity of Blood which is daily and hourly added over and above what is loft; and you will also find how much Blood must be accumulated, that it may be able to make its Way every Month thro' the Veffels of the Womb.

5. It is evident, that in Animals that walk erect, the Momentum of the Blood is lefs thro' the afcending than thro' the defcending Aorta; and therefore that in the faid erect Animals, the Blood is carried with a greater Momentum or Force through the defcending Trunk of the Aorta, than thro' the alcending Trunk of it in prone Animals. Then it is plain, that the Blood flows in greater Quantity through the defcending Aorta in those erect Animals, in which the descending Aorta

Q 2

228 OBSERVATIONS concerning

Aorta has a greater Number of, or lefs refifting Ramifications, than in those that have fewer, or more refifting ones.

6. Now Women (who are upright Animals) have more and larger Ramifications from the defeending *Aorta* than Men, namely, the Arteries of the Womb, (I call defeending *Aorta* any Ramification of it) then in Women the defeending Branches are of lefs Refiftance than they are in Men. For thofe that are in the Womb having no Support, are for the most part expos'd to the free and unrefifting Air. And therefore in Females, (I fpeak of erect Animals,) fooner than in Males, this Monthly Flux of Blood is frequent, and must pass thro' the Womb.

Hence it will be plain, that prone Animals have not that periodical Flux of the Womb, nor erect Males, unlefs upon Account of fome particular Caufe. For we don't lay down, as a Caufe of the *Menfes*, fuch a *Plethora* as is capable of breaking any Veffels, Sc. For Obfervations flew that only Veffels of that Nature ferve for that Flux.

Laftly, We shall not hereafter wonder that fome Difference is observed between those Actions which depend upon the Brains of Males and Females, fince from what has been faid it is plain, that a greater Quantity of Animal Spirits are secreted in a given Time in the Males than in the Females; and if we speak of any other Flux, we shall find fomething

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 229

fomething for our Purpose in the 65th and 66th Aphorism of Sanctorius, Sect. 1. where he has these Words; The Bodies of Men in Health, who use very moderate Food, are every Month heavier than ordinary, viz. about one or two Pounds; and about the End of the Month they return to the usual Weight, like those of Women; but the Crisis is made by the Orine's being more plentiful or more muddy.

From the following Aphorism, Before the Said Monthly Crisis made by Sleep, either the Weight or the Weariness of the Body is fensible, and at last all Things are quieted by a more plentiful Evacuation of Urine than ordinary. Note, That we don't reckon as a Cause of the Monthly Flux, a Plethora, in respect of all the Vessels, or that which happens in any Place, and breaks the Vessels, however small they are; but such a Plethora as affects the Vessels of the Womb, or those Vessels which are exposed to the Air in the lowest Place, Sc.



OF
230 OBSERVATIONS concerning

OFTHE INCREASE

OF THE

Quantity of the Blood

IN THE

NATURAL STATE,

AND THE

PROPORTION of that INCREASE.



I. F we fhould every Day excrete as much as we take, we fhould never grow, and there would be no Increafe of Body in young Animals.

2. Therefore in young Animals the Quantity of the Blood is increased, and the Queftion is, In what Proportion?

3. From the Increase of Weight it is easy to know how much any one is grown; but becaufe that Increase is fo little every Day, that Sanctorius not weighing to a Nicety, look'd upon it as none, the Body must be weighed

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 231

weighed not every Day; but every Half Year or Year; and this Increase of Weight thus found, and divided by the Number of Hours or Days, will give the Increase of the Blood which nourishes each Day and each Hour.

4. But by this Increafe one may know how much the Blood, partly fluid, and partly join'd by Appolition to the Fibres, is increafed, or the Sum of each Argument; for the fluid Blood is equally heavy with that which is harden'd, and the Blood which is accumulated does not immediately nourifh and grow hard: But yet we can't know by Weight how much Blood is gone into Nourifhment and Increafe of the Body, and how much the Excels of the flowing Blood in the Veffels is feparate from each other, for every Day.

5. Sanctorius observ'd that the Excretion in Men was perform'd every Month by Sweat, Stool, Urine, or Hemorragy, more at one Time than ordinary; but that it often was made thro' feveral Places, fo that the Evacuation made thro' any one Place is too little to be observ'd in a rude Manner; befides, fome of those Evacuations are such as may be attributed to an Accumulation made without the Animal, from which we cannot make an Estimate of the Quantity of the Blood.

6. There-

232 OBSERVATIONS concerning

6. Therefore the Quantity of the Increase of the flowing Blood, which is not yet harden'd, must be found separately from the Quantity of the Blood which is gone to the Nutrition and Increase of young and growing Animals; it must, I say, be found from some Evacuation made in a sufficient Quantity, and all at once, from the Blood-Vessels themselves, and under the Form of Blood; for the Evacuation made by Urine is made from Places without the Animal, in which the Excrement may be accumulated, the Blood at the some Time not being increas'd.

7. Therefore to make an Effimate of the Quantity of the Blood feparately from the nutritious Blood, it must be done from the Evacuation of the Blood made all at once, and for a fmall Time, which may be long enough for Obfervation, but not made by any Ferment proper to the excerning Part; for we could not by that Method effeem what is the Increase of the Quantity of Blood; befides, it has been shewn, that there are no fuch Ferments in an Animal, and that there are no fuch Difference of Pores in the Parts to which that Evacuation may be as for bd.

8. Neither shall we here confider any attracting Forces, either of the Blood, or of the Vessels, or of any other Bodies; we shall only see what the Force of Gravity has to do in the Solution of this Question, confider'd accorWOMENS Monthly Courses. 233 according to the Diversity of Vessels in some Animals.

9. Becaufe we fee and confider no Force of the increafed Blood, except that of Gravity; (for there is no other commonly known,) it will be evident that that Evacuation muft be made from the loweft Part of the Body where the Sides of the Veffels are perpendicular to the Horizon, and therefore the Force of Gravity greater.

10. But becaufe even in the greateft Animals the Interval of the upper and lower Part is fimall, therefore the Excefs of the Gravity of the Fluid in the lower Part is very fimall; therefore that defir'd Excretion of the Blood must be made in that lower Part, or the Part of that Part which is interwoven with feveral Veffels of fimall Refiftance, that is expos'd only to the Air.

11. Whence it follows, that this Excretion is fcarce observable in those Animals which Nature has made prone, and such whose lower Parts, that are interwoven with Vessels, are not exposed to the Air; or in which the Sides of the Vessels which are exposed to the Air tend not downward: Therefore no Brutes (except Monkeys, which go often erect) have such a visible Excretion.

12. Then it follows from this, that Women rather than Men must be liable to this Excretion, because they have their Womb fituated in the lowest Part, having Veins con-

234 OBSERVATIONS concerning

conveniently, the Veffels expos'd to the Air, and perpendicular to the Horizon, their Sides being naked and looking outwards, and having nothing to fupport them; therefore Women must have this Excretion thro' the Womb.

13. It follows alfo, for the fame Reafons, that Men whofe *Hæmorrhoidal* Veffels are by any Means increas'd and widen'd more that ordinary, may have fuch an Excretion.

14. And in either Sex before the Blood begins to flow, there must be a Pain and Tension of the Vessels, and all such Symptoms as accompany Tension.

15. But the Quantity of Blood thus excreted every Month, divided by the Number of Hours and Days, will give the Quantity which every Day or Hour is generated, more than what had been carried off or fpent in Nutrition that Day or Hour. Therefore it is no Wonder if all those horary or daily Quantities added together make up a Bulk of fuch a Weight as to be able by its Gravity to break the Veffels of the Womb, and cause a periodical Flux almost every Month.

16. Wherefore the increased Weight of the Body found every Day, if you take from it the Weight of fuch a Part of menstrual Blood as belongs to it, will be the true Weight of the hardening Blood, or of the Blood which goes into Nourishment every Day or Hour.

17. We

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 235

17. We may fay, that the menftrual Blood of Women fweats out thro' the Villi, or fmall Ends of the vanishing Arteries, or the Beginning of the Veins of the Womb, or from their Limits; or because the Arteries and Veins are continuous, and at their Meeting make a parabolick Line, the Vertex of it being the faid Place of Meeting, therefore we fay, That the menstrual Blood flows thro' the Vertices of the fanguiserous Vessels.

\$

18. Now the Blood flows thro' the Vertices of the Veffels in Women fooner than Men, becaufe in Women there are more fanguiferous Veffels about the lower Parts expos'd to a free Space than in Men; for a Man is a Woman without a Womb. Therefore the Blood runs in greater Quantity to the lower Parts of Women, than those of Men, Sc.

19. Therefore becaufe the Women have more fanguiferous Veffels expos'd to a free Space than Men, the Blood by its Gravity will diftend those Veffels of the Woman, and tear afunder the Villi or hollow Fibres, and forun out, as foon as the Women are old enough, for the Blood to be in fuch Quantity as to fill up the other Veffels of the upper Part of the Body, and that by it the Vertices of the Veffels, (that is, of those which run along the inner Surface of the Womb,) by repeated Impulses and Gravitations, are difpos'd

236 OBSERVATIONS concerning

pos'd to give Way to the pulling afunder the Villi, hollow Fibres, or capillary Veffels.

20. But this does not happen to the Females among the Brutes, which are naturally prone, becaufe the Veffels of the lower Belly, and therefore of the Womb, are not more liable to be prefs'd by the Gravity of the Blood, than those of the Head, $\mathfrak{S}c$.

21. Let there be two People in Health, one of which has the monthly Flux of Blood, and the Womb and feveral Veffels, fituated in the lower Parts, and expos'd to a void Space; and the other has no fuch Parts; but in other Refpects they are proportionable in Bulk, this Flux will happen by a Diftraction or pulling afunder of the Villi by the Gravity of a greater Quantity of Blood. For I have prov'd that there is no fecreting Ferment, or Ferment which caufes a Heat in any Part of the Body. We fuppofe all other Things alike, except a greater Gravity, which alone is the Caufe of this Flux.

22. The Veffels in Women ought to be fuppos'd no lefs firm than in Men; for from Gravitation towards the Inferiors alone, it is, that when Girls come to the Age of Fourteen, the *Menfes* flow, and not in Men. Becaufe how firm foever the hypogaftrical Veffels are fuppos'd in Women, yet fince their *Villi* are liable to be drawn afunder, and are more urg'd to it than in Men, they will at laft be pull'd afunder;

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 237

afunder; especially fince the Impetus of the Heart is equal in Men and Women, and therefore the Blood flowing in a greater Quantity to the lower Parts of Women than of Men, and yet not receiving a greater Impulse from the Heart to force it out, and make it return by Circulation, of Neceffity it will prefs with a greater Gravity on the inferior Vessels of Women, and at last run out, namely, thro' those Parts where it gravitates more, Sc.

Note, That the Veffels of the Womb are the loweft of any, I mean of all those Veffels which are not exposed to the free Air, or of fuch Veffels as run to the Parts which are not exposed to the free Air. For the Legs and Feet are exposed to the free Air; for which Reafon the Ends of their Veffels grow hard, and the Parts of the Intestines are also rubbed by hard and moist Parts, which flip by them, whence their Veffels grow hard. Therefore the Veffels of the Womb are necessfarily the weakest of any.

23. But it is to be obferv'd, that the Inteftines, and the external Parts, efpecially the Feet, are always rubb'd with fome kind of Solids, namely, Filth, Cloaths, Shoes, and all other Things which refift the Touch; and that all the Parts of living Animals become callous by Attrition, and being touch'd.

238 OBSERVATIONS concerning

24. In the Male the afcending Aorta bears a greater Proportion to the defcending one, than in the Female, that is, the Afcendent is greater in respect of the Descendent, in a Man than in a Woman.

25. Hence in Men a greater Quantity of Animal Spirits is feparated in a given Time, Ec. Then it follows from hence, that of Neceffity a greater Quantity of Blood must go to the lower Belly in a Woman than in a Man.

26. Then also the Effect of Gravity is equally distributed all over the Body of the Man, which exerts it felf, or is gather'd together in one Part of the Woman, and made fensible.

27. Laftly, Iron and Steel provoke this menftrual Flux (at a proper Time, that is, after the Bones having done growing, do not turn off the Increafe of the flowing Blood, becaufe this Flux does not happen to Girls before they come to Maturity and have done growing) by its Gravity, by which they increafe the Impulfe of the gravitating Blood, or by their Weight remove the Obftacles which hinder the Blood, as it endeavours to flow out; as Mercury alfo does better by a Force of the fame Kind, but greater.

28. Observe, That Quickfilver and Steel carry off too great a Flux of the Belly, as well as too great a monthly Flux, by equal-

ly

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 239

ly removing the Impediments of other Secretions, and fo increafing them, as being by a circular Motion carried equally to all the Parts of the Body.

Efpecially take Notice, that a leffer Capacity, and fo the lefs Dimensions of the Thorax, and a lefs Quantity of Vessels requir'd to nourish it, and a greater Capacity of the lumbar and hypogastrical Region, Sc. in Women than in Men, shew that the Diameter of the ascending Aorta is less, and that of the descending one is greater in Women, Sc.

1. Laftly, A Foot of Mercury weighs as much as 14 Feet of Water : Whence the Gravity of Water is to the Gravity of Mercury as 1 to 14.

2. Air raifes Water to 32 or 33 Feet.

3. Air raifes Mercury commonly to 29 Inches.

4. The Gravity of Air is to the Gravity of Water, nearly as I to 1000. And

The Gravity of Air is to the Gravity of Mercury as 1 to 14000.

Mercury rifes to 27 or 28 Inches,

Water rifes to 32 or 33 Feet.

The Gravity of Water is to Mercury as I to 14.

Which is agreeable to Experience; for $28 \times 14 = 392$ Inches,

And

33×12=396 Inches, a Foot being=12 Inches.

Where-

240 OBSERVATIONS concerning

Wherefore in the New Moons, &c. when the Water is raifed to 14 Feet, the Air will be rais'd to 14000 Feet, and the Mercury in the Barometer will fubfide one Inch.

Again, when upon any other Account the Air becomes lighter, fo that the Mercury may fubfide one Inch, or the Air may be rais'd to the Height of 14000, the fame Thing will happen to Women, which would happen at the New Moons, unlefs they have been thus affected on the laft New Moon.

All these Things may be thus deduc'd.

We fee no Ferment in the periodical Flux, therefore there is an Accumulation in Animals which do not grow, that is, thofe which only nourifh themfelves, and repair what they have loft of their Substance, do make up a Bulk equal to that which was lost. For after they have done growing, the Force of the Stomach remains the fame for fome Years, $\mathfrak{Sc.}$ or rather, as I imagine, is for fome Time exactly, or only able to repair the Bulk, (I mean the increafed Bulk.)

If the Force of the Stomach is increas'd in Proportion to the Bulk, all this will be plain.

That the Forces of the Stomach and Heart are increas'd in Proportion to their (increas'd) Bulk, appears from the Increafe of the whole Body. For the Heart and Stomach are increas'd in Bulk and Proportion to the other. Parts; but the Increafe of Forces is proportionable

WOMENS Monthly Courses. 241

tionable to the Increase of Bulk, cæteris paribus; this is plain of every Muscle, and so of the Heart, and also in the Stomach, if they have only the Force of a Muscle.

But altho' (as Dr. Lister would have it) it should act by Fermentation, the same Thing would be true, because a greater Quantity of Ferment would be secreted from a greater Stomach, or a greater fermenting Putrefaction wou'd arise.

1. It was to be shewn, that when the Increase ceas'd, then, by the Force of the Heart and the Stomach, (which *Viscera* were increas'd with their Forces in Proportion to the other Parts; and therefore at the Time of their Increase made and drove out more Blood than the Nourishment of the Parts alone requir'd,) more Blood is made and driven into the Artery, than the Nourishment of the Body requires, as long as one Body only is to be nourish'd.

2. Therefore that Part of the Blood must be evacuated thro' those Parts where the Blood makes the greatest Impulse, when the Increase of the Body ceases; I say it must be evacuated in those Animals whose Vessels are not capable to bear it.

3. How great the Increase is of that Blood which does not nourifh, must be found; and that being found, one may know why the Evacuations are for the most part monthly. Concerning the

INGRESS OFTHE DISTEMPER

Commonly call'd, the

Venerea Lues, or Pox.



VERY Part of the Animal Body may be inflam'd, altho' without the Help of any Contagion; and therefore alfo be ulcerated,

without the Contact of any other Animal. For whatfoever retards the Blood or the Seed, or thickens them in the Veffels, caufes an Inflammation, which occasions a Rupture of the Veffels, and an Ulcer.

2. In both the Indies, Africk, and the Southern Parts of Europe, where Men liv'd flothfully, and almost like Barbarians, forgetting or being ignorant of what Moses enjoin'd in the 14th and 15th Chapter of Leviticus, the Filth or Particles of Sanctorian Expi-

Concerning the INGRESS, &c. 243

Expiration, which was in them more thick and großs, by preffing the Genital Veffels caufed Inflammations, and an Ulcer, and Gonorrhæa, and other Symptoms of the Effects of Debauchery, (the fame as I have often observ'd in Dogs, and much oftner in Rabbits,) tho' they had never been at Naples, nor could have the Contagion from that Place.

3. In the Southern Countries the Expiration is for the most Part greater than in the Northern, and the Venereal Act more frequent. Wherefore if the Southern People do not pay a constant Obedience to the Mofaical Law, (and fome Parts of Animals will not be easily kept under Subjection, or be confin'd by the Mosaic Prescription,) it is no Wonder that they, without any Contagion transmitted from their Parents, are feiz'd with those foul Venereal Ulcers, whether it be the Neapolitan Difease or the Leprofy, or the Scurvy, which is a Northern Difeafe, arifing from a Stoppage of the Expiration, and an Encrease of Gluttony ; for two much Eating and Drinking, without using any Exercise, stops Expiration.

4. The Venereal Difease among the Southern People is cur'd by the Use of a Decoction of Guaiacum Wood, Sarsa Root, sharp-pointed Dock, Burdock, and such Things in Water. They are unwife who teach that Sarfa, Guaiacum, Sc. are good to R 2 take

344 Concerning the INGRESS of

take away the Acrimony of the Blood; for I could extract nothing out of them but an Acid Spirit or Liquor. They give Relief by caufing Sweat, and washing away the perspirable Filth which flicks about the Vessels.

5. But fince the Northern Filth is more denfe and heavy than that of the Southern People, as alfo our Blood is thicker than theirs, as being made out of Food which is not much warm'd by the Sun, they muft be rubb'd and expell'd by heavier Metals, among which Quickfilver is of great Service. Therefore when the Northern People are troubled with a Leprofy, the Whites, grievous Pains, or a Scurvy accompanied with Ulcers, they muft make use of *Mercury*: For a Leprofy, before the *Neapolitan* Disease was talk'd of, was cur'd by *Mercury*, and now it is no longer heard of.

6. If Gold be ground fmall (as it may be) into fuch little Parts, that their Surfaces, in Refpect of their Bulk, may be fo great, as to make those Particles as light as Water, and fit to fwim in the Blood, these Distempers will more fafely and sooner be cur'd by Gold than Mercury.

7. Add to this, that he who first had that Dilease or Plague, did not get it from the Effluvia of others.

8. The Poifon of Vipers, or Leaves of Tobacco thrust into the Veins when they are open'd, immediately kill an Animal; and yet

the Venerea Lues, or Pox. 245

\$

yet taken in the Stomach does no Hurt; nay, I my felf have given Arfenic to those who, having the Belly-ach violently, could be eased by no other Means, and had receiv'd no Benefit from Opium, and Salt of Amber, or Salt of Hartshorn taken in a great Quantity.

9. Hence it follows, that it is a barbarous Cuftom, and unbecoming Men, to confine very innocent Citizens (who have the Misfortune to be hated by fome of those Priests who were raised up from the meanest of the People) to their own Houses, and to forbid them all human Conversation, for trifling Causes, tho' they are infected with no Contagion.

10. Wherefore, after having administer'd a Vomit two or three Times, let Mercury be taken for two or three Days, twice a Day. When the Patient's Mouth begins to ach, let him abstain from Mercury three or four Days, then let him be purg'd every other Day. When his Pain in the Mouth is over, let him take Mercury again, and let this Method be repeated till the Symptoms ceafe.

The fame Method will ferve for a Leprofy, as I have faid before; afterwards the following Means must be used in either Diftemper: Namely, let the Ulcers be washed with a Decoction made of Roots of sharppointed Dock, *Helenium*, Sulphur, Allom, of each two Ounces; let all be boil'd in eight R_3 Pound

246 Concerning the INGRESS of

Pound of Lime-Water, till it be reduc'd to fix, adding towards the laft, of Water-Creffes, Water-Trefoil, and Cochlearia, an Ounce of each; when it is strain'd mix with it a little camphorated Spirit of Wine. It will also be well to lay upon the Ulcers an Ointment that has in it two Drachms of red Precipitate, one Drachm of white Precipitate, two Scruples of Oil of Tartar per deliquium, and two Ounces of Pomatum: Let it be applied at Night, as the Patient goes to Bed: But it will be proper in the Morning, before the Ointment is laid on, to use the following Cofmetic Water, made with two Ounces of Litharge of Gold, a Drachm of corrofive Sublimate, and ten Ounces of Vinegar; let them infuse for seven Hours in a tinn'd Vessel, and be often stirred; after the thick Part is fubfided, let the clear Part of the Liquor be poured off, and when it is to be used, drop into it Oil of Tarar per deliquium, till it looks milk white; then with a Feather lightly wash the Ulcers with this Water, and then lay on the Ointment. In the mean Time let the Patient drink Guaiacum Beer, made with putting two Pounds of Guaiacum Wood into two hundred Pounds of Beer that has not work'd, and boiling it till a third Part is confum'd. When it is ftrain'd off, it must be made to ferment, and whilst it is fermenting hang in the Liquor in a Linnen-Bag, half a Pound of Antimony not powder'd, and

the Venerea Lues, or Pox. 247

and four Ounces of fharp-pointed Dock: When the Fermentation is over, put this Beer in a Barrel, with a little dried Rofemary, and fome Rinds of Oranges; add befides the Juice of five or fix hundred Millepedes; when the Beer is clear, let the Patient drink nothing elfe.



R4

Con



Concerning the

SMALL-POX.

I would have those that are sick of the Small-Pox to be cured after the following Manner,



Would have the Patient be let Blood whilft his Fever lafts; and tho' the Small-Pox begins to

come out, still be let Blood till the Fever is over.

2. When the Fever is over, and the Small-Pox is come out, (for if the Fever does not go off when the Small-Pox appears, ftill the Vein must be open'd to carry off the Fever,)let the Patient often drink any diftilled fimple Water, to be had at the Apothecaries, that is without Taste, into which you must infuse for fome Hours, without Fire, Sheeps Dung, and then add Syrup of white Poppy, or Opium, if the *Diarrhæa* lessens. Let him drink Barley-Water with Laudanum and Syrup of White Poppy. This Drink, which is often given in the Variolæ Confluentes, or Flux Pox, (as Physicians call it,) caufes

Concerning the SMALL-Pox. 149

caufes a Spitting, and cures by that Means. Apply nothing to the Face, unlefs you would ftill more hinder the Expiration which is already hinder'd, and bring back the Fever; the Day after the Small-Pox is broke out, give the Patient Water-Gruel.

3. If the fifth Day after the Small-Pox is broke out, or the fixth, or the feventh, or eighth Day, the Small-Pox goes in again, a Vein is to be open'd again, and Cantharides in Powder must be laid to the Neck.

If the Small-Pox be of the Confluent Kind, when the Diftemper is over, a Purge must be taken.

4. But it becomes me, who have but a little Time to live, being in my fixty firft Year, to behave my felf like a Man; for *Publius Syrus* fays, (and I am alfo of his Opinion,) that it is the Part of a Chriftian, or of one that would behave himfelf as fuch, kindly to fet a Man right who is out of his Way, therefore I fhall fubjoin fome Remedies very ufeful for those who are troubled with Epilepsies, Palsies, or the Gout.

In an *Epilepfy* or *Palfy*, after Vomiting and Bliftering, give the Antiepileptic Tincture. To the younger Patients give Mercury and Broth with Earth-Worms. The Antiepileptic Tincture is made of wild Valerian Root, and white Dittany, of each fix Drachms, of Caftor, Pigeons Dung, of each half an Ounce, fix Drachms of the clammy Bark of Oak, half an Ounce of Cinnamon,

250 Concerning the SMALL-Pox.

mon, as much of Rofemary Tops, two Ounces of Senna Leaves, Jallap, and Turpeth, half an Ounce of each; make a cold Infufion of all in eight Pounds of white French Wine for ten Days.

When it is ftrained, add Powder of Human Skull, and Shavings of Elks Hoofs, of each two Drachms, and four Ounces of Sugar; mix in four Ounces of Oil of Amber, and two Drachms of Spirit of Caftor: Give two Ounces to a Patient of about feven Years of Age, and to an elderly one four.

It is often good in Palfies to give this Tincture without the Purgatives, when the Diftemper begins to go off. It is alfo good for the Patients to rub and chafe the affected Limbs ftrongly before the Fire, and then to dip them in cold Water.



FOR THE

Arthridis, or GOUT.



Urging Medicines will fignify little; Vomits are of Ufe, and afterwards Mercury, given by little at

a Time. Apply to the Part where the Pain is Mesues Balsam, commonly called Balsamum Guidonis.

To those Parts where the Gout is, apply continually Linnen Clothes, wet with the following Liquor: Hot spring Water eight Pounds, white or yellow Arsenic two Ounces, fix Ounces of unflack'd Lime; set altogether upon a flow Fire for 24 Hours.

If the Patient have a Pain in his Stomach, give him preferv'd Nux Moschata, Powder of the Sarfa Root, and Jesuits Bark, but oftenest Oil of Cinnamon, and preferv'd Nux Moschata, and preferv'd Ginger.

It will be good alfo for the Gout, to pour into twelve Pounds of white Wine or Beer, four Quarts of hot Milk, then having taken away the Curd put a Pound of Berries of Hawthorn into the remaining Liquor, and boil all for half an Hour. Let the Patient drink a Pound of this Morning and Evening.



OF THE DIVISION OF

DISTEMPERS.



LL Diftempers are either from the *Fluids*, or the *Canals*, or compounded of both, or without the Animal.

The Difeases of the Fluids are either of the Blood, or of the Liquors secreted out of the Blood, either from their Increase or Defect, and thence arises a vicious Quality, that is, a Fever.

The Difeases of the Canals are a Wound, a Tumour, an Vlcer, an Inflammation, &c.

Therefore to the Difeafes of the Excretory ones belong Sleepy Symptoms, which are owing to the Defect of the Excretion in the Brain, and the Palfy for the fame Reafon: But the Epilepfy arifes from the Increafe, and the Vertigo from the Defect. Madnefs from Of the DIVISION of Diftempers. 253 from the Increase. A Vertigo is a Tumour or Obstruction. A Gutta Serena is properly a Tumour of the Arteries of the Retina, or of the Optic Nerves, (for every Obstruction is a Tumour,) and therefore belongs to the common Difeases.

A Suffusion is a Disease without the Animal, and is a Kind of an Abscess or Tumour, like a Steatoma, or Tumour of Fat.

The Ophthalmia (a Species of which the Gutta Serena is) is a Tumour with Inflammation, and therefore belongs to the common Difeafes.

An *Epiphora* belongs to the Increase of Secretion, unless there be an Inflammation, and then it is a *compound* Difease.

An Hæmorrhag y of the Nofe is a Wound, and belongs to common Diftempers.

A Ranula belongs to the common, being a Tumour under the Tongue.

An Angina or Quinfy belongs to the common, for it is a Tumour with an Inflammation of the Glands of the Throat, and often of the Muscles.

An Afthma is an Obstruction, and so a Tumour (fometimes schirrous) of the Lungs, and belongs to the common Distempers.

A Pleurisy is a common Disease, namely, a Tumour with an Inflammation.

A Peripneumonia is a greater Kind of Pleurisy.

A Phthisic is a common Disease, namely, an Ulcer of the Lungs or Kidneys, Sc.

An Empyema is an Ulcer of the Pleura, and of the internal intercostal Muscles, open'd into the Cavity of the Thorax.

A Syncope is for the most Part a Kind of Asthma, and truly of the Heart.

A Palpitation of the Heart is a Convultion, and that often of the Splenic Arteries.

The Difeases of the Stomach are Difeases without the Animal.

A Stone in the Kidneys or Bladder, is a Difeafe without the Animal. See Dr. Lifter, Part 2. of Springs, &c. and he alfo fays the fame of an old Gout. Each of these Diftempers is a Sort of Tumour.



All the Diseases of the INTESTINES



Elong to the Increase or Defect of Excretion, or to the common Diseases. Likewise the Diseases of the Liver

and Spleen, except the Hypocondriac Diftemper, which is a Difease in the Intestines, without the Animal.

The Dropfy is a Wound of the Lymphatics, and is a common Diftemper.

The fame may be faid of the Difeases of the Kidneys and Bladder.

The Green-Sickness, or Chlorosis, is an Anasarca, or Tumour, Ec. and is a common Distemper.

The Hysterical Affection is of the same Nature as the Hypocondriac.

The other Difeafes of Women (befides Fevers) belong to the Increase or Defect of Excretion, (for the Menses and Lochia or Cleansings are Excretions, or at least Wounds, as the Hamorrhagy,) or to the common Diftempers.





OF THE

SCURVY.



S the Fever is an ill Quality of the Blood, or of all that is to be excreted, whilft it flows in the Veffels, fo the Scurvy is an ill Quality of all or most of the Things which are excreted whilft they flow thro' their excretory Ducts. Or,

The Defect or Increase in the excretory Canals.

Note, That fince the Humours to be excreted do not appear to be vitiated in the excretory Ducts, unless the Blood it felf be vitiated, therefore the Scurvy does not confift in fuch a Vitiation; wherefore we shall fay, that the Scurvy is a Difease compounded of the Diftempers of the excretory Canals in Complication, that is, of the Defect of feveral of them in their Excretion, of the Augment of several, Sc. and of the common Diseases, and often Diseases without the Animal.

From



From this Division of Diseases it is plain,

1. THAT the fame Difeafe may often be referr'd to feveral Kinds; as for Example, a Fever is either of the Sanguiferous Canals, or of the Excretory Canals; becaufe it is often join'd with the increased Secretion of Animal Spirits, Sc. and a Derivation increas'd on the Fibres of the Heart.

In that Cafe many Properties of Difeafes are difcovered, and therefore feveral Methods and Indications of Cure.

2. It is eafy thus to find a Method, or Indications will immediately appear. Becaufe fuch Things are known as will fhew whether there be an Increafe or Defect, or a Wound or Tumour; therefore in thefe few Words are contain'd all the Things concerning which our Anceftors wrote whole Volumes in a difputing Way. For the Cure of S

: 100

Ulcers, &c. is in fome Meafure known; and fo by confequence the Cure of Difeafes, which may be referr'd to Ulcers.

3. If a Difeafe be compounded of feveral Symptoms of different Kinds, fuch a Difeafe may be referr'd to what Kind you will; but always to fuch a Kind as the *ftrongeft Symptom* belongs. *Note*, That the Pain is not always the ftrongeft Symptom; as for Example, in an Inflammation, that Symptom is faid to be the moft urgent, which can kill the Patient in the fhorteft Time.

Now we must shew that the Division here laid down, agrees with the Method of Cure us'd by the *Physicians*; especially with that which belongs to the Diseases where Surgery is of Use; which comes nearer to the Nature of several Diseases according to our Division. See *Sleepy Disease*, p. 248.

But we must first define what the Scurvy is, and it is plain, that the Scurvy is not a fimple Difease; but several Distempers seizing the Patient at a Time, which have nothing common to each other but the Slowness of the Pulse, which does not beat so fast as naturally it should. Wherefore it is peculiar to the Northern Nations of Europe, whose Pulse is naturally flower than that of others; and perhaps that arises from the Blood's retiring inwards, (see Bellini, Page 100, and Page 528.) which makes the Pulse beat flow. Therefore Blood-letting is not good in such a Case;

Cafe; becaufe letting Blood will excite that Dimotion, or Removal of the Blood inwards, which is proper to the Northern People, and which gives us the Scurvy, and is the Occafion of our flow Pulfe. But if this Diftemper depends upon contrary Caufes, (fuch as are the Caufes of a quick Pulfe, as the French Climate, Sc.) there will be excited a Feverifh Dimotion, Sc.

Therefore a *Scorbutic* Dimotion does not require letting Blood, that is, when we know that an inward Dimotion will follow upon opening a Vein; and therefore that is fo feldom done, that it may be look'd upon as never done.

Wherefore we must not fo much fear letting Blood in a Scurvy; but this Fear was introduc'd by fearful and ignorant Germans.

Therefore we shall rather fay, that the Scurvy is a Complication of feveral Distempers different in Nature, except that in all of them the Pulse beats flowly.

When therefore feveral Difeafes feize on an Animal, the Germans mistake fuch a Cafe for one fingle Difeafe.

No Wonder then, that the Germans are deceiv'd in the Cure of the Scurvy; becaufe not one but feveral Remedies are requir'd, it being a Complication of feveral Difeafes. And indeed if the greateft Part of the Difeafes (or Symptoms) may be taken off by moderate Remedies, then will the Scurvy be S 2 faid

faid to be carried off by them, and that it is of fuch a Nature as Dr. Willis calls Sulphureo faline, becaufe the Sulphur, or Heat, is the most prevalent. But if the greater Part of the Difeases that have the Name of Scurvy, are us'd to be taken off by Aromatics, and the Cochlearia, &c. then that Scurvy will be of the Kind which Willis calls Salino Sulphureus, because the Salt or Coldness prevails. But generally, the Things call'd Nafturtian and Antiscorbutic, prevail; because commonly in this Case, the Pulse beats more flowly, and such Remedies occasion a fwist Pulse.

Therefore the Difeafe which the Germans now call the Scurvy, the Ancients Lienofitas, or Obstructions, is compounded of a schirrous Asthma, Ulcers of the Mouth and Legs, Pains in the Limbs, the Palsy, convulsive Motions, Looseness, a Stoppage of Stool, an Atrophy, and several Exanthems or Enchymosis's.

But becaufe all have not thefe Symptoms, it happens that fome have not the Afthma, (then the Scurvy is faid to be hot from the Manner of its Cure,) and to them hot Things or thofe which are truly antifcorbutic, as Nafturtium, &c. are not neceffary or profitable: But if the Patient had an Afthma, Aromatics and Medicines with Pepper would be of Ufe, which are proper for an Afthma, as alfo Steel and Pepper are good for a cold Scurvy,

Scurvy. If the Patient has a Pain in his Limbs, then it is good to breath a Vein, and give Mercurius dulcis, otherwife not.

If he has Tumours in his Stomach, or in his Colon, or any Sharpnefs there, then Steel is convenient; but if he has no Sharpnefs or Tumour arifing from a fharp and viscid Humour, Steel will do no good, at leaft there is no Need of it, Mars being only fit to attenuate what is viscid, Sc.

Becaufe of the Ulcers (if there are any) a Decoction of Guaiacum, with vulnerary Herbs, will be convenient.

If the Patient has the Palfy, give him those Antifcorbutics, which are faid to be hot.

But if he has convulfive Contractions in the Oesophagus, Gc. give him volatile Acids with Laudanum, that is, Salt of Amber.

And thus may the Cure of the Scurvy be eafily perform'd, by refolving it into the Symptoms of which it confifts, and whole Remedies are known.

Add to this, that ftrong Purgatives are not convenient for the Scurvy, which is attended with Convulsions, because they irritate too much. But they are convenient in a fcorbutic Palfy.

Then, when there is a Loofenefs, you must hardly use any Purgatives; neither are the fharp and pepper'd Antifcorbutics good in that

that Cafe, Sc. Laftly, For Spots use Antiicterics; for the scorbutic Spots are livid, and almost black, as in the Black Jaundice.

Wherefore the Method of Cure is not here (nor in any other Diftemper) to be found out from the unknown Nature of the Caufe; but from the known Cure of the Symptom. For I don't apply a Decoction of Guaiacum or Sarfa, &c. to fcorbutic Ulcers, becaufe they carry off the Acid, or fixed Salt, but becaufe they dry and heal other Ulcers, whatever be their Nature or Caufe.

For Ulcers were cur'd before Men thought of any Acid in them; for, as Celfus fays, the Remedy was not found out after the Reafon, but the Reafon was look'd for after the Remedy had been found effectual.

Note, That the Scurvy appears to be what the Antients call'd Cathexia. See Calius Aurel, B. 3. and Sylvius, p. 704, and 705.

And tho' I have faid that all the Symptoms which accompany the Scurvy have this in common, viz. a flow Pulfe, yet this is not always true, (fee Sylvins, p. 705.) but then the Exception holds good only when there is an Inflammation or Phlegmon, or a rambling Gout. And oftentimes alfo without this, those that have the Scurvy are feized with an uncertain and wandering Fever, like an intermitting Fever, to which they are liable. Wherefore nothing is always common to this compounding Symptoms, whence the Scurvy is not a fimple Difeafe. Note

Note again, That Pechlin (in the 177th Page of his Observ.) determines the Cause of the Scurvy to be a Salfugo, or a Mixture of an Acid and an Alkali, and that as the one or the other exceeds, the Remedies for the most Part must vary, or else that one must use faline Bitters, and volatile Medicines, fuch as the volatile Salts, the Cochlearia, ftringy Trefoil, Strobylinum, Sc. which yet do not agree with a Patient fick of the Scurvy, who is of a bilious Complexion, who ought rather to take Things that have a small Sharpness mix'd with balfamic Bitters, as Spirit of Salt, or of Vitriol, made fweet with Spirit of Wine, to which if you join the Bitternefs of Aloes, Myrrh, Wormwood, Centaur, you will have another Kind of antifcorbutic Remedy.

Water-drinking is a Cure agreeable with either Courfe, (as it is a Diffolver of Acids and Alkalies,) and chiefly drinking warm Water, whence Tea-drinking, and a Decoction of Guaiacum Wood, and the Root of sharp-pointed Dock in Water, are all good.

The Sleepy Disease is cur'd by ftimulating Medicines, (or fuch as are fit to awake out of Sleep,) that is, provoking the Secretion of the Spirits, namely, by Vomits, sharp Purges, Caftor with Vinegar held to the Nofe, Oil of Amber, Spirit of Hartshorn, sneezing Medicines, bliftering Plaisters, an Issue behind in the Neck, and an Electuary of Cephalics or Aromatics

matics. Laftly, opening a Vein will take away the Foulneis, and that Stagnation which hinders the Secretion and Derivation of the Spirits, Sc. The fame will do for a Palfy.

An Epilepfy (which for the most part arifes from a Repletion and Irritation) is cur'd by letting Blood, becaufe when the Blood is in too great a Quantity, it makes too great an Affluence of Spirits in the Brain, or an Increase of Secretion, as an Irritation makes an Increase of Derivation. For which Reason also, Purging Medicines are convenient, because they diminish the Quantity of the irritating Humours; for when the Spirits have more Acrimony than ordinary, they have the fame Virtue as a greater Quantity; and for that Reason Vomits are used, and a setaceous Remedy. Then a strong Decoction of Guaiacum, to make a great Evacuation. Lastly, Anti-epileptics, all which have a narcotic Power, or hinder the Derivation of the Spirits. You may fay the fame of native Cinnabar, for Mercury hinders the Emanation of the Spirits in the Brain, by compreffing the Nerves that lie between the Arteries.

A Vertigo is a Tumour or Obstruction, and is cur'd after the same Manner as an Epilepsy, that is, by whatever takes off a Stagnation. Wherefore also Anti-epileptics and Narcotics meet in the End; because they rarify Of the DIVISION of Diftempers. 265 rify thick Blood, and hinder too great a Derivation of Spirits into the Heart, which give a Velocity to the Blood, and caufe a Swelling of the Arteries in the Eyes, Sc.

A Catarrh is cur'd by those Things that take off the Secretion about the Head.

A Gutta Serena is cur'd by fuch Things as take off oedomatous, or white, foft, and infenfible Tumours, Purgatives, (if there be an Opthalmia, a Vein must be open'd) fudorific Decoctions, bliftering Plaisters.

A Suffusion is cur'd like a Steatoma, &c. that is, a Depression of a confirm'd Cataract is proper, as cutting off for a Steatoma.

An Opthalmia, or Inflammation of the Eyes, is cur'd like other Inflammations, namely, by Bleeding and mild Purges, and then repelling Medicines, Anodines, Digeftives, and Refolvents applied to the Part, or Diffolvents. See *Riverius*, pag. 54 and 55.

An Epiphora is cur'd with Aftringents, and fuch Things as turn the Secretion of the Serum another Way; as alfo a Catarrh.

An Hamorrhagy is cur'd like Wounds, by Bleeding and Vulnerary Medicines, &c.

A Quinfy is cur'd like Tumours accompanied with an Inflammation.

An Afthma (except it be convulfive) is a Tumour nearly fchirrous, and is cur'd (in Cachochymies) by a Vomit, which hinders the Increase of the obstructing Tumour, which would be occasion'd by the Viscosity of
of the Stomach, Sc. and by all attenuating Medicines, and which evacuates Tumours that do not come to a Suppuration. See *Riverius*, pag. 100, and 101.

A Pleurisy is cur'd like other inflam'd Tumours, &c.

Spitting of Blood is cur'd like an Hæmorrbagy, that is, after the Manner of a Wound.

A Phthisic is cur'd like an Ulcer, as also an Empyema.

Vomiting is cur'd by Aftringents, and Medicines which diminish Excretion, among which, the most excellent is the Water of the perpetual Fountain at the Town of *Disart* in *Fife*, that noble and chief Province of *Scotland*, where the PITCAIRNS have their Patrimony.

An Obstruction of the Liver is cur'd after the fame Manner as any Tumour or Schirrus.

The *Jaundice*, like any other Obstruction, namely, by such Remedies as take off a Lazinefs, as (after Vomiting to remove the Obstructions) Steel, Mercury, and Gold-Dust, which overcome those Stoppages by their Gravity; because the Jaundice is an Obstruction of the small Glands, or a stuffing of them by a too thick and viscid Bile, and it is followed by a diminiss discretion, or Secretion in the Liver.

But I might call back Fevers themfelves to this Division, where the Pulse is most quick.

For then a Fever is the increas'd Secret ion of Animal Spirits flowing to the Heart: Becaufe, fince in a given T ime a greater Quantity of Spirits is teparated, therefore an equal or a given Quantity is fecreted in a lefs T ime, and to the Spirits fall more frequently in the Muscles of the Heart, and the Motion of the Heart is more quick or frequent.

But if the Quantity of the Blood be increas'd, (by the Diminution of any Secretion, the reft not being increas'd, as it often happens to those that are going to have a Fever,) then in a given Time (I don't yet fuppose the Pulse chang'd) a greater Quantity will be expell'd thro' the Heart, and run thro' the Brain. Therefore in an equal Time a greater Quantity of Spirits, that is, of nervous Juice, will run into the Nerves, from the Arteries of the Brain, and being fecreted will be fent into the Fibres of the Heart, which will cause a more strong Contraction of them, and a stronger Expulsion of Blood from the Heart, propagated to more diftant Places in equal Times, whence the Pulfe will be more frequent, and a Fever will be occafion'd.

And this is the Reafon why letting Blood is proper in Fevers, becaufe the Quantity of the Blood being diminish'd, the Secretion of the Spirits is also diminish'd.

But becaufe Blood-letting in fharp periodical or intermitting Fevers, does not immediately

diately help, when administer'd the common Way, there must be given, after the Patient has been made to vomit, the *Peruvian* or Jesuits Bark, (call'd *Quina Quina*,) or, what is better, Powder of Flowers of Cammomile, then a Dose of Steel, or Filings of Iron, and the Patient must ride on Horseback pretty often, which will be fafer and more effectual.

From what I have faid it is plain, that there's no fuch Thing as an Art or Method of Curing; but only the *Practice of it*, as *Virgil* fays, and that Remedies were found out by Chance, and not Defign, (except Blood-letting after the Circulation was known,) and will ftill be fo.

2. That Phyfic therefore is the Remembrance of those Things which Use has shewn to be an effectual Remedy for such and such Distempers: For the Nature of the Bodies flowing or residing among the Veins is not known; and therefore it is by Observation only that we know what is proper for each Disease, after we have often experienced it to be fuccessful in that Disease.

3. But he appears to cure by Chance, not Defign, who does the fame Things over again, which can't be done by others that try the fame Way. And therefore that can't be attributed to Method or Art.

4. Whence either Zacutus the Portugueze cur'd by Chance, or was too much guilty of Lying. Of the DIVISION of Diftempers. 269 Lying. By Chance, because if he had known some of the Cases of which he was ignorant, and improv'd by it, they that came after might have follow'd his Steps in

Phyfic. 5. Therefore, as an Example of Cure, or of the Way of applying Remedies, we muft propole the Cure of a Quartan Ague, by giving the Jefuits Bark or Cammomile Flowers in the fame Manner. For in this Way of Cure we neither know the Nature of the Bark, or of the Flowers, or of the Blood, or of its Motion, which caufes the Fever to be Quar_r tan. We only know by Obfervation, that in this Age this fort of Fever is always carried off by thefe Helps.

6. Therefore, in order to carry off all other Remedies as happily, we muft change one unknown Body into another unknown Body, which does not belong to any Method or Art; for a known Figure is not only to be given to an unknown Body by help of a known Figure, which Geometry teaches, or Mechanics perform; but the unknown Figures of the Parts of a Body muft be chang'd into other unknown Parts, or unknown Forces are to be chang'd into other unknown Forces, which Chance fometimes performs, but Art cannot fhew it.

7. For it is most evident and manifest, that neither Blood-letting nor Purging, nor any

any other Excretion through the Pores of the Skin, or other Glands, can carry off Fevers, whether continual or intermitting, with the fame Succefs as the faid American Bark or Flowers of Cammomile do an intermitting Fever: And therefore he that would expel continual Fevers with the defir'd Succefs, muft first have experienc'd a Remedy as good as the Bark is for driving away Fevers; and therefore the Praife of this muft be referv'd to Chance and Fortune, and not to the Art, Sagacity, or Defign of Man.

8. We call that Body unknown to us, not only whole Weight and Figure, and Quantity, and Situation, and Quantity of Motion, and Cohefion of Parts, and Forces of Attraction, are unknown to us; but we shall also call unknown, fuch an one whose Weight and Colour we know, if we compare it with another, (as Gold,) but remain ignorant of the Cohefion of its Parts, and attractive Force, if we compare its Parts with the Parts of other Bodies: Thus Lead and Gold are Bodies unknown to us; that is, their inmost Nature is not understood by us Men. In one Word, that is unknown, all whofe Relations to other Bodies we are not acquainted with: And therefore no Body will ever (unless by Chance) change Lead into Gold, if he knows no more of their Natures than we do at prefent ; yet those Phyficians

ficians are like the Alchymifts, who boaft of curing Difeafes whofe Natures depending upon the Nature of the Bodies caufing them, are not more, but much lefs known to us than the Nature of Lead or Gold.

Therefore I don't doubt but that I have folved this noble Problem, viz. To find a Remedy for a given Difeafe.

Jamque opus exegi-----



THE



THE

METHOD

Of CURING the

SMALL-POX,

Written in the YEAR 1714.

For the Use of the Noble and Honourable Family of MARCH.



F a Child, or any Perfon grow fick, feverifh, or has a Pain in the Back, or *Slot* of the Breaft, Lofs of Appetite, Drowfinefs, fhort Cough,

 \mathbf{a}

Sneezing, watery Eyes, or fome of these; but always accompanied with fome Heat, and frequent Pulse, or Drought. In this Case Blood is to be taken at the Arm, or with Loch-Leeches; and if the Fever ceases not, tho' the Pox appear, let Blood a second or third Time. Mean time, give the Child

The METHOD, Sc. 273

a Spoonful of Syrup of White Poppies at Night, and in the Night-time alfo, till Sleep or Ease comes.

2. After the Pox appears, and Fever is gone, then steep a Handful of Sheeps Purles in a large * Mutchkin of Carduus-water, or Hylop-water, or Fountain-water, for five or fix Hours; then pour it off without straining, and fweeten it with Syrup of Red Poppies. Give of this a Spoonful or two, every fourth or fifth Hour, to make the Pox fill, and preferve the Throat. Always at Night-time, and in the Night, give a Spoonful or two of the Syrup of White Poppies for a Cordial, that keeps down the Fever, and keeps up the Pox.

3. If the Pox run together in the Face (which is the only Thing that brings Hazard) use the Infusion of the Purles, and the Syrup of White Poppies oftner than in other Cafes; alfo about the eighth Day from the appearing of the Pox, or a little before that, give the Child to drink of Barley-water, fweeten'd with Syrup of White Poppies. This will make the Child spit, which faves the Child.

4. The Child's Drink may be Milk and Water at other Times, or Emulfion, but ufe the first rather.

5. Apply nothing to the Face. Use no Wine, or winish Possets.

6. If

* A Pint Measure.

6. If any Loofenels comes before the fourth Day of the Eruption, ftop it with Syrup of Poppies, and five or feven Drops of liquid Laudanum given now and then till it be ftopt.

Let the Child's Diet be all along a thin Bread-Berry in the Morning, a weak Broth, and foft Bread for Dinner, and Milk and Bread at Night, or Sugar-Bisket and Milk, and about the fifth Day from the Eruption, give the Child Water-gruel fometimes.

Note, If at any time the Small-Pox difappear, with a Raving before the fifth, fixth, or eighth Day, from the Eruption, then let Blood again, and apply a large Bliftering Plaifter between the Shoulders, and give an Emulfion.

2. If the Small-Pox fall down, without raving, then apply a Bliftering Plaifter large between the Shoulders, and give an Emulfion, and boil in a Gill of Water, and as much White or Red Wine, half a Dram or a Dram of Zedoary-Root fliced, two Figgs, and two Scruples of Theriac or Diafcordium; fweeten it with Syrup of Kermes and White Poppies, each half an Ounce.

3. In the End of the Difeafe, that is, about the tenth, eleventh, fourteenth, &c. Day, after the Eruption, if the Child's Defluxion is großs, either apply a new Veficatory, or give often the Spirit of Hartshorn, in Syrup of Violets, or a Vomitor.

Laftly,

²⁷⁴ The METHOD of curing

the SMALL-Pox.

275

Lastly, When the Pox is blackened fufficiently, or about the fourteenth Day from the Eruption, let the Child drink Whey, eat Pottage, Sc. Broth with Prunes, unless the Child's Belly is open enough of it felf.

But if the Child is fo young or unlucky, as not to cough heartily, and force up the Defluxions; or if the Frost thickens it, apply to the *Slot* of his Breast a Poultice of Theriac, Diascordium, Alkermes, Oil of Rosemary, and Cinnamon, with warm Claret, in a double Linnen Cloath often.

2. And to the Throat apply, in a double Linnen Cloath, a Poultice of Cow's Dung boil'd with Milk, and foft White Bread : Put a little Brandy to as much as you apply at a Time.

3. For the Defluxion alfo, give inwardly fome of this, which has a Dram of Sperma Cæti, well mix'd in a Glafs-Mortar (not a Brafs one) with fine Sugar; to which add, at Leifure, Syrup of Violets, or Balfamick, or Poppy Syrup, with fome Spirit of Hartfhorn.

If the Pox was confluent or run together on the Face, then, after the Perfon is recovered, give a Purgative, to bring away the Remainder of the Pox within the Guts.

FINIS.



A. CIDS and Alkalies, the Effects of them in the Cure of Diftempers. Page 212 Air, its Power and Nature. Opinion of Bohnius. P. 70 p. 76 p. 77, 78

Of Dr. Lister. Of Dr. Mayo. Of Malpighius, Etmuller, Borellius and Willis. p. 81

The Author's Sentiments. p. 83, Gc. Aftrucius, a Frenchman, his Judgment upon Contraction and Compression widely different from that which Men of Sense have ever entertain'd. p. 2 Author's Demonstration of Two of Mr. Boyle's Theorems. p. 222

B.

BARK (American) vulgarly called the Jesuit's Bark, its Ufe in Fevers. p. 217 Chymical Experiments made thereon. p. 218 p. 2:1 Its Use in the Gout. Bellini, his Theorem of Perspiration demonstrated. p. 209 His Observation upon Cassis Problem concerning Letting of Blood. p. 215, 217, 258 Blood, the Manner of its Circulation through the minutest Vessels of the Body. p. 33 And in Born Animals and Embryons. p. 168. Of the Caufes of the different Quantity it flows with through the Lungs of living p. 65 Creatures and Embryo's.

Blood,

Blood, of the Motion which reduces the Aliment in the Stomach to a Form proper for its Supp. 106 ply. Of the Increase of its Quantity in the Natural State, and the Proportion of that Inp. 230, 240 creale. Borellius, his Errors in his Treatife of the Motion of Animals. p. 72, 74, 75, 76, 77, 136, 138 and of others. See Air. Boyle (the Honourable Robert) proves that there is no Acid in a Human Body. p. 220 CANTHARIDES fuccefsful, both externally and internally administer'd by the Author. p. 221 DIGESTION of Bohnius refuted. p. 113 Distempers, of the Division of them. p. 252 From which the fame Difease may often be referred to Several Kinds. p. 257 p. 254 Dropfy, its Origin. E. P. 249, 264 EPILEPSY, or Palfy, its Cure. Eye, the Theory of its Diftempers. p. 23 Some Miftakes therein corrected. p. 26 F. FERMENTS, their Doctrine. p. 41, 121 Fevers, concerning the Cure of them by Evacup. 192 ation. Fluids, their Secretion. p. 47 Fountain, theperpetual one at the Town of Difart in Fife, the chief Province of Scotland, excellent for the Cure of Vomiting. p. 266 N. B. Here the PITCAIRNS have their Partimony. (f. GERMANS deceived in the Cure of the Scurvy, &c. p. 259 p. 25 I Gout proper Remedies. p. 238 Gravity, its Effects. GRE-

GREGORY (Dr. JAMES) his Judgment upon Contraction and Compression. p. 2 Guiacum Wood, its Powers. p.66 H. HARVEY (Dr.) his Account of Circulation. Vid. Blood. His Propositions concerning the Generation of Animals. p. 71, 73, 77 Hippocrates, his Observations on the Stomach. p. 124 Huygens's Demonstration of the Sieve. p. 46 Of Secretion. p. 52 Of Perspiration. p. 204 I. JAUNDICE, its Cure. p. 266 Intestines, Diseases of them. p. 254 Inventors, a Solution of the Problem concerning them. p. 139 Vid Circulation. L. LEPROSY, its Cure. p. 244 Lightning, its Power in extinguishing Respiration. p. 97 Inftance of a Youth killed thereby at Edinburgh, 1708. Ib. Lifter (Dr.) of the Working of the Chyle, and of Fermentation. p. 241 Of the Gout. p. 254 Lues Venerea, of the true Ingress of that Distemper. p. 242 Its Cure among the Southern and Northern People, p. 243, 244 M. MADNESS, its Origin. p. 253 Mercury, its Power p. 66, 238 Monthly Courfes of Women, Observations thereon. p. 225, 235, 238 N. NEWTON (Sir ISAAC) Usefulness of his Mathematical Principles. p. 56, 136, 197 OPIUM,

0. OPIUM, its Qualities. p. 177 Observations of Etmuller and Vepsar thereon. p. 178 The Author's Examination of Etmuller's Sentiments. P. 179. 0 Jeq. Chymical Experiments made, at the Author's Request, by Mr. Alexander Monteith. p. 190 Sanctorius's Observation. 16. P. PECHLIN's Opinion of the inteffine Motion of the Blood. p. 99 Perspiration different at Padua and in England. p. 20,2 Phyfic, its Profession, free from the Tyranny of any Sect of Philosophers. p. 5 Its Excellency, and the Study of it previous to that of Philosophy. p. 6. 5 Jeg Parallel between the Two Sciences. p. 9 Nothing ought to be used in Physic which is not as certain as the Objects of our Senfes. p. 13 Porifts, their Notions refuted. p. 132 Pox. Vid. Lues Venerea. R. RESPIRATION explained. p. 68 S. SANCTORIUS, his Experiments. p. 63, 107, 122, 124, 190, 200, 201, 205, 206, 229, 231, 242 . p. 256 Scurvy. Secretion in Animals, &C. p. 51 Sleepy Disease, its Cure. p. 263 Small-Pox, its Method of Cure. p. 248 The fame farther enlarged for the Ufe of the Noble and Honourable Family of MARCH, in the Year 1714. For which we are obliged to Mr. Freebairn, the Author's most intimate Friend. p. 272 Spj-

Spirits, invisible ones, of Helmont, Wedelius, and Doleus. p. 113 Steno (Nicholas) his Doctrine of Fluids. p. 194 The Author's Obfervations. p. 196 Stomach, its Motion. Vid. BLOOD. Sylvius, of the Apoplexy, &c. p. 175, 180, 183, 189, 262 ULCERS, how cured. p. 262 Vepfar (John-Jacob) his Account of the Apoplexy. p. 177, 189 Vertigo's Sentiments of Caffius thereon. Anno 1400. p. 185 Sentiments of Dr. Willis p. 185 Refuted. p. 186 Bellini's true Definition thereof. p. 187 Vieussens (Raymond) pretended to find an Acid in the Blood, contrary to Boyle. p. 223 His Principles ridiculous. P. 224 WEDELIUS, his Notion of Air. p. 76, 113, 114, 128,134 Willis (Dr.) opposes Dr. Harvey, and feems to have endeavoured to over-turn the Foundations of the Art of Phyfic. p. 38 His Writings cenfured. P. 39 A Solution of his Queftion concerning Afthmatical Perfons. p. 126 His Sentiments of Apoplexies, Lethargies, &cc. p. 176, 180 His Errors refuted. p. 182, 183, 185, 189 Women's Courfes, Oc. . p. 225 Z. ZACUTUS, the Portugueze Physician, his Character. p. 268 ERRATA.

T. T. DESAGULIERS L. L. D. not D. D. Page 22. Line 12. for what, read which. From Page 230. to Page 241. the ming Title should be, Of the Increase of the Quantity of the Blood. Page 49. Line 26. read Similitude. Page 215. Line 18. read draw off.







